



**DELHI UNIVERSITY**  
**LIBRARY**

## DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Cl. No.

R3

421

Ac. No.

35816

Date of release for info.

2 JAN 1969

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of 5 Paise will be collected for each day the book is kept overtime.

[illegible]



## **DIAGNOSIS OF MAN**



# DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

*by*

KENNETH WALKER



JONATHAN CAPE  
THIRTY BEDFORD SQUARE  
LONDON

FIRST PUBLISHED JANUARY 1942  
SECOND IMPRESSION APRIL 1942  
THIRD IMPRESSION JUNE 1942  
FOURTH IMPRESSION SEPTEMBER 1942

JONATHAN CAPE LTD 30 BEDFORD SQUARE, LONDON  
AND 91 WELLINGTON STREET WEST, TORONTO

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN IN THE CITY OF OXFORD  
AT THE ALDEN PRESS  
PAPER BY SPALDING & HODGE LTD.  
BOUND BY A. W. BAIN & CO. LTD.

## CONTENTS

|      |                                      |     |
|------|--------------------------------------|-----|
|      | PREFACE                              | 7   |
| I    | THE DARK HOUSE                       | 13  |
| II   | THE CELL                             | 22  |
| III  | THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS                 | 31  |
| IV   | HUMAN TYPES                          | 45  |
| V    | THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM | 57  |
| VI   | MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY                   | 74  |
| VII  | DIFFERENT PATHS TO TRUTH             | 92  |
| VIII | CONSCIOUSNESS                        | 102 |
| IX   | THE VEDĀNTA                          | 116 |
| X    | YOGA                                 | 132 |
| XI   | HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS       | 143 |
| XII  | RELIGION                             | 164 |
| XIII | BUDDHISM                             | 181 |
| XIV  | CHRIST AND BUDDHA                    | 194 |
| XV   | THE CHURCH                           | 204 |
| XVI  | MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY                | 219 |
| XVII | 'IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE . . .    | 234 |
|      | BIBLIOGRAPHY                         | 253 |



## P R E F A C E

THIS book is written neither by a philosopher nor by a student of comparative religions, but by a medical man. But it must be confessed that the author has made inroads into regions that are not generally regarded as part of the province of medicine. For this trespass he makes no apology. In his opinion the time is long past when a doctor can confine his attention to the body, looking upon it as a self-sufficient mechanism, the working of which is unrelated to the activity of the mind and spirit. Mind, spirit and body are but different aspects of the same fundamental unit, man, and are all in need of study if we are to arrive at any understanding of his nature. Too long have we been working as specialists in separate and strictly limited compartments, believing that in dealing with certain abstractions we shall eventually understand the nature of the whole. Only when biology, psychology, philosophy and religion have all thrown their separate findings into the pool can there be any hope of gaining some insight into the nature of man.

The work of putting together the material for this book was started in September 1940, almost simultaneously with the bursting of the Blitzkrieg on London. This statement is not made in any spirit of bravado, for humanity soon adjusts itself to new conditions, but for the purpose of giving an indication of the atmosphere in which the book was written. War is a great destroyer, not only of lives and property, but also of illusions. The throbbing of the wings of destruction in the darkness overhead makes for honesty, however small the actual danger of personal injury may be. Thoughts that nowhere touch reality, but are merely creations of the fancy, are swept aside, for war strips us of our borrowed fineries, and leaves us with what is our own. And because our minds restlessly seek a firm basis on which to build, even those opinions and beliefs that are genuinely ours are re-submitted to careful scrutiny. In this way war becomes a great clarifier of values, the false being sifted from the true, so that what remains stands out in bolder relief.

## PREFACE

The destruction of the great illusion<sup>1</sup> that man is automatically progressing has shaken our faith in many of our most cherished schemes. The men of this, and of the last century, have implicitly believed that by means of the skilful organization of mankind they could ensure a golden future. This war has destroyed far more than the League of Nations; it has also rendered meaningless all those theories that were based on the idea that an inner change can be achieved from without. Many of our most serious thinkers and ardent workers for a better world have devoted their whole time and energy to further Utopian schemes which were entirely dependent upon exterior organization. The present conflict has cleared our vision, and helped us to see that only by an effort from within can man's nature be altered.

In preparing this book the author has received so much help from the writings of others, quite apart from the magical aid that lies in such immortal literature as the New Testament and the Mahabharata, and from a perusal of the classical works of the great European and Eastern philosophers, that it is difficult for him to define the limits of his indebtedness. He would like, however, to acknowledge how much he owes to Professor Radhakrishnan's recently published *Eastern Religions and Western Thought*, which has proved to be an inexhaustible source of knowledge and inspiration. Other books that have been of great value to him are P. D. Ouspensky's *New Model of the Universe*, C. E. M. Joad's *Guide to Philosophy*, Madame David-Neel's *Buddhism*, and the three volumes of *The Cultural Heritage of India* issued by the Sri Ramakrishna Centenary Celebration Committee. With this inadequate acknowledgment of his indebtedness he must rest content. A bibliography of books that have been consulted will be found at the end of this volume.

Harley Street, London, W.1

September 1940-January 1941

*To*  
**MY TEACHERS**



## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN



## CHAPTER I

### THE DARK HOUSE

IN that book of Sufi wisdom, *The Mathnawi* of Jalalu'ddin Rumi, there is a story called 'The Disagreement as to the Description and Shape of the Elephant'. It runs as follows:

The elephant was in a dark house: some Hindus had brought it for exhibition.

In order to see it, many people were going, every one, into that darkness.

As seeing it with the eye was impossible, each one was feeling it in the dark with the palm of his hand.

The hand of one fell on its trunk: He said, 'This creature is like a water-pipe'.

The hand of another touched its ear: to him it appeared to be like a fan.

Since another handled its leg, he said, 'I found the elephant shape to be like a pillar'.

Another laid his hand on the back: he said, 'Truly this elephant was like a throne'.

Similarly, when anyone heard a description of the elephant, he understood it only in respect of the part that he had touched.

On account of the diverse place of view their statements differed: one man entitled it 'dal', another, 'alif'.

If there had been a candle in each one's hand, the difference would have gone out of their words.

The eye of sense-perception is only like the palm of the hand, the palm hath not power to reach the whole of the elephant.

The eye of the Sea is one thing, and the foam another; leave the foam and look with the eye of the Sea.

Day and night there is the movement of foam-flecks from the Sea: thou beholdest the foam, but not the Sea. Marvellous!

The genius of the poet has gone straight to the centre of the problem of knowledge. Our hands fumble over the surface of the elephant, each

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

of us proclaiming what we have found, and none of us being able to relate the part to the whole. The fact that we have invented scientific instruments which render our special senses a thousand times more acute does not reduce our difficulties. If anything, it increases them, because we become so engrossed in our minute examinations that we are unable to listen to what our colleagues at the other end of the elephant are saying. We have all become specialists, learning more and more about the part, and less and less about the whole. Even if we could spare the time to study different specialities, the search for knowledge has become so intense and so many observations have been recorded, that no man can ever hope to know all that others have discovered. The task of synthesizing so many observations is beyond the wit of man. It would seem, indeed, that the very existence of an elephant has been forgotten, so pressing is the work we have on hand. As a result, we are now engaged solely in compiling vast catalogues of observations on legs, trunks or tails, as the case may be.

This is the unsatisfactory state in which medical science now finds itself, and what is true of medical science is equally true of the whole body of knowledge. Medicine studies man, and man is an indivisible whole of such enormous complexity that it is impossible to grasp the whole truth about him. We have, therefore, taken him to pieces in order to study each piece separately, and now, as medical men, we are finding the greatest difficulty in putting the pieces together again.

The physician who is called upon to deal with a sick man is confronted with a truly formidable task. What renders the task so difficult is the fact that he does not even know what a normal man is, still less a sick one. He has a nodding acquaintance with some of man's organs and has a shrewd idea how they work, but of the nature of man himself, he is woefully and confessedly ignorant. The physician is, indeed, in the position of a mechanic, who has been summoned to put right an engine that works in accordance with principles that are quite unknown to him. He is like a mechanic, say, who understands the structure of steam-engines, but, because he is ignorant of the existence of electricity, is quite incapable of dealing with an automobile. If all that is wrong with it happens to be some mechanical defect in a pipe, he may be able to put things right, but if the dynamo is wrong, he is

## THE DARK HOUSE

completely at a loss what to do. Small wonder that the physician in the privacy of his heart is appalled by his own ignorance, and puts all his trust in the one advantage that he possesses over the motor-mechanic, the help that he derives from the curative forces of nature, the *vis medicatrix naturae*. Indeed, as every doctor knows, all that he does is to act in the capacity of nature's humble and admiring assistant.

In his interesting book, *Man the Unknown*, Alexis Carrel points to a strange disparity that exists between the progress achieved in the sciences of inert and of living matters. During the course of the last century, physics and chemistry have made such stupendous advances that they have outdistanced all other branches of science, and particularly those sciences which concern themselves with the phenomenon of life. It is as though the examiner of the trunk of the elephant had been so industrious and had made such progress, in his handling of it, that his reports were no longer intelligible to those palpating other portions of its body. The mathematical formulae and the hypotheses of the physicists are truly magnificent, but they are utterly beyond the comprehension of the biologists. The latter are still in the preliminary stages of their task, that is to say, in the descriptive stage. They are still making observations, and are painfully sorting out and attempting to classify phenomena, but so far, they have been unable to produce order in the material that they have collected, let alone deduce from their observations the laws of life. Not that they are to be blamed for this. Progress in science is dependent on the discovery of a suitable technique, and the techniques for examining living matter are inferior to those applicable to matter that is inert. A living cell cannot be handled so simply as a powder in a test-tube, for it is a phenomenon of such immense complexity that there is no method available for apprehending it. If this be true of a living cell, it is still more true of such a stupendously complicated object as a living man. How indeed are we to approach the subject which of all others is of greatest importance to us, the subject of man? All that we have been able to do so far is to make certain abstractions from him and study them to the best of our ability. This has entailed the calling in of various specialists, each of whom, when he has completed his work, has presented us with a different description of what man is. The anatomist, the

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

physiologist, the bio-chemist, the geneticist and the psychologist have all contributed their quota of knowledge, but when we come to add up what we have been given, the sum of it still fails to represent man. The man described by each of the specialists and the man described by all the specialists, is still not a man. There is a residue that remains, a residue that is more important than all that has been abstracted. Indeed, when we come to look into it more carefully, all that the specialist has done has been to hand us a collection of schemata formed around the particular technique which each of them has employed. We have been given a corpse dissected by the anatomists, a collection of organs and extracts by the physiologists, and a pattern of behaviour by the psychologists. Man, as Alexis Carrel has confessed, still remains the unknown

But it is not only because the subject is so difficult that man's knowledge of himself remains rudimentary. Man has been so occupied with the world outside him that he has had no time to study the world that is within. In primitive ages this was inevitable, for the struggle to survive was so fierce that it absorbed all his energy. Tools had to be made, food procured, dwellings erected, homes defended and children reared. There was little time left over for the study of the phenomena that he carried about in his own person. Later on, when his life was better organized, the study of his nature was left to the priests and the medicine men. Since these possessed no more knowledge than their fellows they resorted to the use of cut-and-dried formulae, and thus hid their ignorance from the world. In this way it happened that long before his attention was turned on himself, man had gained quite a considerable knowledge of the movements of the sun, moon and stars, of the rise and fall of the tides, of metallurgy and of the cultivation of crops. But on the whole, man's body and mind worked satisfactorily, so that it seemed that they could be left to their own devices, and attention directed to those objects which by study could be shaped to man's ends. In any case, the external world was a much more satisfactory subject for observation, for the study of it promptly yielded tangible results, results that the mind delighted in contemplating. Our minds have a strong partiality for clear and definite solutions, and instinctively dislike all efforts that lead to a feeling of insecurity. Some sort of order can be

## THE DARK HOUSE

discovered in the world outside us, whereas in the world that is within, there is nothing that can be caught hold of and submitted to scrutiny. There was every inducement therefore to leave man's body and mind alone, and to get on with the study of objects that yielded more profitable results

At a still later period necessity, in the shape of injury and disease, drove man, in spite of his distaste for the task, to study his own body. It was clear that the medicine men and priests could not be relied upon to do all that they had promised. They were deprived, therefore, of jurisdiction over the body, but still left in charge of the soul. Men became doctors, and because, before prescribing a cure, it is necessary to know something about the body, anatomy and physiology were studied. That this move on the part of the early doctors to gain some knowledge of the mystery of life met with considerable opposition is shown by the obstacles that were frequently put in the way of their studies. Human anatomy had to be studied in secret, and sometimes the help of criminals had to be enlisted in order to obtain material for dissection.

Although the army of physiologists, anatomists, pathologists, biochemists and other experts that medicine has pressed into her service has revealed much that was previously unknown about man's body, it is only since the early part of this century that medical men have turned their attention to man's mind. Previously it was felt that this could be left to take care of itself, or that if in need of help, the patient could apply to the priests. But when it was found that many of the diseases that the physician had to treat, had their origin in the mind, there arose the necessity for studying the mind as well as the body. A new branch of medical science was founded, the science of medical psychology. At first this was looked upon as a sort of Cinderella of the medical family, at whom the older members of the profession laughed, and of whom they were a little bit ashamed. But medical psychology, after a struggle, succeeded in establishing itself as a reputable department of medicine, and great hopes were even entertained for its future. Medical men, it was now felt, were equipped to treat not only the body, but also the mind. There were even those who looked upon Freudian analysis as a new religion that would eventually save the world; and certainly some of

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

its exponents quickly developed the qualities that are often attached to the priesthood. Yet, when examined closely, all these new schools of medical psychology told us very little about the real nature of man. What they actually succeeded in doing was to describe and to explain some of the mechanisms that are found in a mind that is sick. They were in no sense of the word complete systems of psychology, and left out of their account the whole of the spiritual side of man. Medical psychologists admitted that they were not interested in the subject of religion, and if pressed to account for the religious urge in man, they generally attempted to explain it as a survival in the adult of the fantasies of childhood.

The foregoing represents in brief form the attitude of present-day medical science to the subject of man. Few doctors have any time for the study of philosophy, for their profession is an exacting one, and it is all that they can do to keep abreast of its advances. What is true of medical science is also true of the whole civilized world. Men, at the present time, are so engrossed in their various occupations, in manufacturing superfluous goods, in buying and selling, in accumulating wealth, or in struggling merely to maintain themselves, in altering their environment, in building for the future, and in rushing hither and thither, that they have no time left to wonder what it is all about.

Up till recently there has existed an excuse for this failure on the part of civilized man to inquire into the why and the wherefore of his existence. The wave of prosperity that followed the industrial revolution, the triumphant progress of science, man's impressive conquest of the external world, Darwin's theory of a mechanical evolution that guaranteed a bettering of the species, and the books of many Victorian and Edwardian writers—all created a feeling of optimism. Man was marching forward to a glorious future, and to the Golden Age portrayed in some of H. G. Wells's earlier books. With the fate of man assured, what need was there for him to interrupt his labours in order to inquire about his nature? Speed was the key to success, and those who moved fastest and crammed most activities into each fleeting hour would arrive first. There was no time to think.

But disillusionment has come, and we begin to doubt whether material prosperity, even when it exists, is necessarily synonymous with suc-

## THE DARK HOUSE

cessful living. We are discovering that much is wrong with the form of civilization that we have invented. Hitherto we have prided ourselves on our education, but in practically every country we find a decrease, rather than an increase, in the intellectual and moral culture of those who are responsible for our public affairs. Despite the immense hopes that we had placed on it, our civilization has failed to develop men of intelligence and culture who are capable of guiding us along the dangerous road that we are treading. We can no longer rest satisfied with ourselves, or our leaders, and some of us are pausing for a moment, and wondering whether Browning's optimistic opinion of the world is any longer justified.

This book is an attempt on the part of one who, however ill-equipped he may feel himself to be for such a task, is re-examining certain fundamental questions, and more particularly the question of man's nature. Only if one knows what man is, can one hope to find out what he may become. The task that the writer has set himself is an immense one, since it entails a survey not only of science, but also of religion. A detailed survey is manifestly impossible, and all that can be attempted is to provide a bird's-eye view of the subject which may encourage the ordinary man to think about matters that hitherto he has been content to leave to the experts.

Before embarking on the main thesis it is necessary, in spite of the philosophical technicalities involved, to say something about the nature of sense perception, for it is through our sense perceptions that we gain our knowledge of the outside world. What do our special senses tell us about the objects that surround us? They would seem to tell us a great deal. But reflection shows us, if we are observant, that much of the information that our sense organs give us, relates, not to what is going on 'out there', but to what is going on inside ourselves. What actually happens when we see a red pillar-box is that certain vibrations towards the lower end of the spectrum impinge on the corneas of our eyes, are refracted on to the retinas and send impulses travelling along the optic nerves which finally set up a commotion in the occipital area of the brain. As a result of this inner agitation, and of relating it to certain similar agitations that we have previously experienced, and still remember, we state that we have seen a red pillar-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

box. If, however, we had happened to be colour-blind, we would have been equally justified in calling the pillar-box green, for the colour that we have seen is projected by us on to it. Of the real nature of the box, or indeed of its real existence, we are totally ignorant.

How large a part of what we know of the external world is inferred by our minds instead of being directly perceived is admirably expressed by Sir Arthur Eddington in his book, *Science and the Unseen World*:

Consider how our supposed acquaintance with a lump of matter is obtained. Some influence emanating from it plays on the extremity of a nerve, starting a series of physical and chemical changes, which are propagated along the nerve to a brain cell; there a mystery happens, and an image of sensation arises in the mind, which cannot purport to resemble the stimulus which excites it. Everything known about the material world must in one way or another have been inferred from these stimuli transmitted along the nerves . . . The mind as a central receiving station reads the dots and dashes of the incoming nerve signals. By frequent repetition of their call signals, the various transmitting stations of the outside world become familiar. We begin to feel quite a homely acquaintance with  $2LO$  and  $5XX$ . But a broadcasting station is not *like* its call signal, there is no commensurability in their natures. So, too, the chairs and tables around us which broadcast to us incessantly those signals which affect our sight and touch cannot in their nature be like unto the signals, or to the sensations which the signals awake at the end of their journey . . . It is an astonishing feat of deciphering that we should have been able to infer an orderly scheme of natural knowledge from such indirect communication.

Having stressed the roundabout and inferential character of our knowledge of the external world, Eddington proceeds then to contrast it with the directness and immediacy of our knowledge of ourselves:

Clearly there is one kind of knowledge which cannot pass through such channels, namely, knowledge of the intrinsic nature of that which lies at the far end of the line of communication.

This is not an inferred knowledge of outside things, but a knowledge of something as it is in itself. And this one thing that we know directly, and as it really is, is mind.

## THE DARK HOUSE

Mind is the first and most direct thing in our experience; all else is remote inference . . . We have an acquaintance with the mental and spiritual nature of ourselves known in our minds by an intimate contact transcending the methods of physics.

In giving this long quotation from Eddington there is no desire on the part of the writer to suggest that the conclusions at which that eminent scientist arrives are necessarily true. Whether we agree with Eddington or not will depend on the school of philosophy to which we happen to belong, and this in turn will depend on the kind of person that we are. Although the critic who stated that philosophies tell us a great deal about the philosophers but very little about the universe, was a cynic, it cannot be denied that our choice of a philosophy is determined as much by the appeal that it makes to our emotions as by the appeal that it makes to our intellect. The thoughts that we entertain are to a great extent determined by our likes and dislikes; one theory appeals to us, another is distasteful. The personality of a philosopher has an influence in determining the philosophy that he favours. Bishop Berkeley, reacting from the materialism of his age, evolved a purely idealistic philosophy. Hobbes, impressed by the mechanistic explanations that Galileo had applied to physical phenomena, preferred an extreme form of materialism. The real reason for giving this quotation from Eddington is for the purpose of opposing the view, so commonly held by the non-philosophically minded reader, that the external world is composed of physical objects possessing qualities in their own rights, which are presented to the mind exactly as they are. This is never the case, for it must be confessed that our senses tell us very little about the physical world. They are like the hands of the Hindus that in the tale quoted above from *The Mathnawi* of Jalalu'ddin Rumi, touch the surface of the elephant and seek to find out what it is like. Yet it is only through the sense organs that we become acquainted with the outside world, for we live in a dark house. 'If there had been a candle', says Jalalu'ddin Rumi, 'in each one's hand, the difference would have gone out of their words.' What the poet meant by these words it will be the endeavour of this book to show.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

subdivided into two main groups, the fixed cells out of which the tissues, and organs are built, and the wandering cells that may travel throughout the body's whole length. Each of these groups contains a great many varieties of cell, for example, amongst the fixed cells, epithelial and connective tissue cells, and amongst the wandering cells, red and white blood corpuscles. Of all the cells in the body, the epithelial are the noblest, since it is out of them that are formed such organs as the brain and the endocrine glands.

By the use of a suitable technique, fragments of living tissue can be grown in flasks. This allows of the cell characteristics being studied, just as the characteristics of microbes in culture can be studied. Each type of cell is found to have its inherent qualities, which remain the same even after several years have elapsed since their separation from the organism from which they were originally obtained. Cells taken from a chick embryo have now lived for nearly a quarter of a century, although the life of a fowl has a span of only two or three years. After three or four days a culture ceases to thrive, and if left would die, poisoned by its own excretions into the serum that nourishes it. To avoid this the culture is transferred periodically into fresh serum, and provided that sufficient care be exercised, and that no accidents befall it, there appears to be no reason why it should not continue growing for ever. The cell that is most easy to grow is the primitive cell of the connective tissue, but it has also been found possible to cultivate more specialized cells from muscles and nerves, and even from such organs as the kidney. In such cases the cells lose their highly specialized character. No longer dedicated to the performance of special duties, they become free individuals, and revert to a humbler and more generalized type.

The characteristics which are used to distinguish one cell from another are their mode of locomotion, their manner of associating with each other, their rate of growth, their response to different chemicals, the food they require, the substances they secrete, and their shape and internal structure. It must also be remembered that the medium in which a cell lives is of the greatest importance to it. This applies equally to cells living within the body, and to cells grown outside it in flasks. The organic medium that surrounds the cell in the living body

## THE CELL

must indeed be regarded as forming an integral part of the tissues. It is composed of blood flowing in the interior of the smallest blood vessels or capillaries and of plasma, or lymph, that has filtered through their walls. Upon the physico-chemical state of this organic medium in which the cells live depends not only our health, but even the manifestations of our psychic life, our very thoughts and emotions. It was not without some justification that the ancients spoke of the different 'humours' of the body, the 'humours' on which everything depended. Although much of their theory has been discarded, it still survives in a modified form in the theories of the part played by the secretions of the endocrine glands in the physical and psychic life of the organism. This subject will be dealt with more fully in the following chapter, but in the meantime it may be pointed out that it is by their presence in the medium surrounding the cells that the internal secretions exert their influence. When a person's temperament has been changed by the absence of thyroid, or he suffers from undue fatigue through a deficiency of suprarenal secretion, these changes are due to a lack of the necessary secretions in the fluids nourishing the brain.

The cell has been said to be bounded by a limiting membrane, but it is in no way a membrane that shuts it off from the outer world. Rather is it a kind of sieve through the meshes of which a ceaseless exchange and barter is being carried on with the outer world. Nutritive material is absorbed through these meshes, in the form of sugar, fats and proteins, and through them oxygen is taken in. Respiration is not only a function of the total organism, but it is the function also of the individual cell. Equally important to the taking in of nutriment is the elimination of waste products. A cell kept in a medium filled with waste products dies like a fish in a bowl of stagnant water, so that freedom to eliminate is in the end as important as freedom to take in.

We may picture the cell as a self-contained, self-running chemical factory in which the nucleus plays the part of the board of management. Within it a hundred different processes are being carried out; processes of hydrolysis, oxidation, breaking down, building up, taking in and giving out. Never for one moment are its activities allowed to cease, for life must always be kept going and the cell can never be at rest.

What then is life? To ask for a definition of life is to ask for something

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

that scientists have never been able to supply — unless Bichat's description of life as that which results from the action of forces counter-acting death, can be accepted as a definition. Yet this definition was not given in any spirit of cynicism, for it is impossible to describe life by means of any simple formula. Needham has supplied the somewhat technical definition that life is 'a dynamic equilibrium in a polyphasic system, consisting of proteins, fats, carbohydrates, sterols, lipoids, cycloses and water' But it were better to avoid seeking a definition, and consider instead some of the characteristics of life.

In round terms, life is an energy-system, the energy of which is directed to maintaining itself. We have seen that the cell fulfils these conditions, it feeds itself, grows, excretes waste products, moves and reproduces itself. This in turn entails dependence on its surroundings, for it is from these that the cell takes up its energy, and into these that it returns energy. Life is, therefore, an energy-system that can maintain itself as a self-centred balanced unity by giving to and taking from its surroundings. And now comes in a very important feature. Life acts as though it *desired* to maintain itself. It is, above all, this element of purposive intention that distinguishes the animate from the inanimate. A cell sets out to maintain itself as though acting in accordance with some design to which it subscribes. A stone that falls to the ground, a magnet that attracts iron filings, an iron that expands on heating cannot be regarded as desiring to fall, to attract, or to expand, but a cell works as though it desired so to work. It is purposive and resourceful. But, broadly speaking, it is impossible to draw a sharp line between the living and the non-living. As Sir Charles Sherrington has put it:

There is in living nothing fundamentally other than is going forward in all the various grades of energy-systems which we know, though in some less rapidly, and less balancedly than in others. Whether atom, molecule, colloidal complex, or what-not, whether virus or cell, or plant or animal compounded of cells, each is a system of motion in commerce with its surround. The behaviour of the living body is an example of this, and we call it living. The behaviour of those newly discovered so-called viruses is an example of this, and there is hesitation whether or not to call it living. There is between them all no essential difference.

## THE CELL

Life is really a question of complexity of organization. The adjective 'living' would never be applied to a simplified organization, but only to a highly heterogeneous, complex organization that had been integrated into an individual. Some scientists now regard the division of physico-chemical systems into living and non-living as being merely a convenient convention, but a convention that rests on no scientific basis. The old idea of an occult life-principle which, added to matter, brought it to life, is now abandoned. The word 'life' is retained as a useful term to describe all those faculties that are characteristic of living matter. Life is a train of fire that finds fuel for itself and produces ashes, a train that will continue until its force is spent, and then it will go out.

This is the point of view of the modern scientist, but at the same time, he hurries to point out that, although the re-lighting of the fire of life is continually taking place, its starting-point must always be a spark from the living. Life always comes from life, and every search for another starting-point has proved fruitless. Ancient scientists did not always hold that life only comes from life, although William Harvey, the discoverer of the circulation of the blood, believed this. 'The living thing', he wrote, 'is always from an egg, which is again from a living thing'. Pasteur confirmed Harvey's view by his classical investigation of the processes involved in the fermentation of wine. In his experiments he could find no evidence that germs were ever spontaneously generated.

The biological problem in a complex organism resolves itself into two parts, first the life of the constituent cell, and second the life of the total organism. Although each cell has a separate self-centred life, together the cells form a corporate unity. Each cell helps, and is in turn helped by, its neighbour, the whole agglomeration of cells forming an ideal socialist community, such as politicians may have dreamt of, but have never seen realized. Sometimes the cells are so intimately joined one with another (for example, the nerve-cells) that the microscope is unable to discover any separation between them. Nevertheless, experiment has shown that they still remain individuals, so that the death of one does not necessarily entail the death of the other. Each is a self-sufficient living unit.

One of the factors that integrates the component cells into one whole

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

is the dependence of each individual on its surroundings. Forming part of a cell's surroundings is its neighbour, so that every cell is modified, and responsive to, its neighbour. There is a balance maintained between them, a balance that determines activity, and particularly the activity of reproduction. In tissue cultures, where the cells are all of one kind, reproduction goes on indefinitely, untrammelled by the presence and restraining force exerted by neighbours of a different nature. What happens when a cell is entirely egocentric and uninfluenced by the activities of the cells surrounding it is shown when an organism is attacked by cancer. A malignant growth may be regarded as a set of bandits let loose in a peaceful socialist community. Originating, say, amongst the cells of the breast, the cancer cells assume a fierce and completely inconsiderate activity. Watched on a cinematograph film cancer cells are seen to be possessed of a fanatical frenzy, pushing on one side the quiet, well-disposed cells of the body and thrusting themselves into their place. With mad impetuosity they have set out to conquer the body, and since it is by sheer brute force that they will accomplish this, they multiply prodigiously. They are invaders who have no idea other than that of conquest by force.

It is the absence of conformity to a general plan that distinguishes a cancer cell from the ordinary cell of the body. In the healthy body everything is done deliberately and in conformity with design. Although each cell is a self-contained, self-supporting unit, it still remains a unit that works for the common good. It is as though somewhere in the body there was a master-mind at work, a mind that co-ordinated the work of the parts with the whole, integrating the activity of a million million cells. The number of cells out of which the human body is built is said to be about a thousand billion, all of which obey the law, and all of which are able to trace back their ancestry to one original progenitor. Nobody knows how the beehive and the anthep are co-ordinated and ruled. Nobody knows the nature of the mind that rules and regulates the activities of the thousand billion cells that constitute the body.

The modern scientist, as we have seen, refuses to admit that there is any essential difference between life and no life. What has he to say on the subject of mind and no mind? In order to find an answer to this

## THE CELL

question we must follow the hierarchy of living systems downwards, and note the point, if such exists, at which mind quits living matter. We and the animals have minds, and since the Psalmist has referred us to the ant for a moral lesson, we must assume that the insects have minds also. What about the lowest forms of life, the unicellular organisms? Some wit has said that if an amoeba were as large as a dog, we would never hesitate to accord to it a mind. An amoeba works according to a plan; its movements are purposive, and from its behaviour it would appear to have primitive desires. But it is less adaptable than a dog and would seem to be less capable of being educated. But who has ever attempted to educate an amoeba? The psychology of an amoeba has yet to be written, but if by mind is meant purposive action, the amoeba has a mind.

Teleological explanations are generally taboo in science, but it is quite impossible to approach any biological problem without thinking in terms of purpose and design. Who can watch a battle between the white corpuscles of the blood and invading bacteria without saying that the whole behaviour of the corpuscles is designed to overcome and devour the organisms that threaten not only their own lives, but also that of the whole organism? If the warrior ants who defend the ant-heap from invaders are accredited with mind, the leucocytes in the blood stream have just as much right to be accredited with it. What we see when we peer through the microscope is a battle worked out according to the principles of strategy and tactics. First advance those white cells whose role it is to absorb and to neutralize the poisons that have been let loose by the invading bacilli. Next appear the warriors, who, in turn, must paralyse the activity of the invaders by a discharge of poisons, and finally the phagocytes, or scavengers, whose business it is to engulf the dead bodies of the enemy. So pregnant with purpose are all these activities that the adjective 'defensive' is inevitably attached to these cells.

The application of cinematography to cell culture has given us an extraordinary insight into the nature of cell life. There can be few things more impressive than watching a film of young connective tissue cells (known as fibroblasts), and wandering cells (similar to the white corpuscles of the blood). The scene is one of intense activity

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

embodying the dramas of birth, the struggle for existence, and death. First of all we see the young cell growing to maturity, and then suddenly dividing into two. This division is an extremely complicated process, the twisted skein that makes up the nucleus splitting down the middle and then rearranging itself into two nuclei, which retire to opposite ends of the cell. A membrane then forms between the two halves, and in a convulsion of activity, the cell breaks into two separate individuals. Transferring our attention to one of them we watch it in turn gradually becoming more mature. Sometimes it repeats the process, but sometimes we watch it growing old, its nucleus shrinking, its substance becoming translucent and its movements feebler. Life for an enfeebled cell is as ruthless as it is for an aged animal in the jungle. The wandering cells of the body approach and attack it, instinctively knowing that it cannot defend itself. Finally it is engulfed, thus providing sustenance for its fellows. To us, watching the whole of the drama, the scheme behind it all is apparent. Birth and death must play their part in the greater life of the tissues. But how would the cell itself, knowing only what was happening in its immediate neighbourhood, interpret its existence? It would know only that it was alive, and that life was difficult, and it would probably come to the conclusion that in living it had served no ulterior purpose. That it was an essential part of a greater life would be beyond its power of comprehension, and who shall say whether its ignorance in this matter is greater than our own?

The same purposive action of the wandering cells of the body is seen also in free unicellular organisms. According to some patient observers of the paramoecium, this minute creature not only acts purposively, but is even capable of learning from experience, and experience entails the existence of memory. It may well be that the observations of the paramoecium observer are capable of some other interpretation, but until that is forthcoming we must accredit the paramoecium with memory and mind. Mind, indeed, would seem to be coincident with life, not only the Mind of the Great Thinker, but also the mind existing in living beings, His incarnated thoughts. Hobbes once said: 'I know that there have been certain philosophers, and they learned men, who have held that all bodies are endowed with sense; nor do I see, if the nature of sense be set along reaction solely, how they can be refuted.'

## CHAPTER III

### THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS

ONE of the questions raised in the last chapter was how the activities of the numerous cells that go to make up the body are co-ordinated so as to supply the needs of a single integrated individual. Each cell, as we have seen, is a self-sufficient, self-contained chemical factory, and yet they all combine together for the welfare of the whole, of which each forms so tiny a part. This is a problem to which the biologist has not been able to find an entirely satisfactory answer. Some of the co-ordinating factors in the body are known, but not all.

We have seen that a cell is influenced by the environment in which it lives. If the fluid surrounding it is deficient in the materials it requires for its activity, it ceases to work, and if the same fluid becomes clogged with the waste products of the cell, it dies. Also, it was shown that cells of one kind grown in a flask continue to multiply indefinitely, but that cells in the body that are surrounded by neighbours of a different type maintain a balance in growth, no one type of cell attempting to overcome another by sheer weight of numbers. It is mainly by means of these two mechanisms, the composition of the surrounding fluid and the balanced action of one cell against another, that co-ordination is secured in simple multi-cellular organisms.

When we come to more complex creatures, two new, and very important, mechanisms come into action: the endocrine glands and the central nervous system. It is these mechanisms that we must now study, so that we may be in a position later on to discuss the nature of man's body and mind. Fortunately it will only be necessary to furnish very simple descriptions of them, for both are highly technical subjects, to the study of which experts have devoted the whole of their lives.

It is an interesting fact that the two systems that play such an important role in co-ordinating the activities of body and mind are developed from the same structure, namely, the skin. Embryologists

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

have shown that both the endocrine glands and the central nervous system are formed from an infolding of the outer layers of the developing embryo, so that they may be said to be embryologically closely related to the skin. At first sight, this kinship of the brain and the endocrine glands with such a humble structure as the skin would seem to be surprising. But the surprise is due to our regarding the skin as an unimportant structure. The skin is far more than a waterproof covering; it is a highly complex structure, the importance of which is only now being realized. If this were not so, how could we explain the fact that the skin so often reflects the activities and errors of the brain? Skin eruptions often follow a nervous shock, and we are told that some of the saints developed stigmata as the result of their dwelling upon the Crucifixion of Christ.

The story of the discovery of the endocrine glands is one of the most interesting in the history of medicine. As is the case in so many other discoveries, it is difficult to fix any date for it, for long before the existence of internal secretions was proved, their presence in the body was suspected. Perhaps the credit for being the first to formulate a theory of internal secretions should be given to Bordeu. Bordeu was a physician at the court of Louis XV, and he must have been a remarkable man, not only because court physicians are usually too much occupied with their duties to further medical advances, but because he formulated so clearly the role of the ductless glands. This formulation appears in his statement that he personally believed that each organ of the body was the workshop of a specific substance which passed into the blood and regulated the chemistry of the body. Should any of these substances be absent, he added, the harmony and poise of the body suffered. Could any guess have gone nearer the mark than this?

Yet it was only late in the nineteenth century that proof of the accuracy of Bordeu's theory was obtained. The proof came as the result of an accident. The Swiss surgeons, Kocher and Reverdin, emboldened by the progress made in aseptic surgery, came to the conclusion that it was justifiable to undertake the removal of goitres. It had been taught that, like the appendix, the thyroid was a gland devoid of any function. But a few months after these two pioneers had removed it independently from their patients, these patients passed into a curious

## THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS

condition that was similar to cretinism. The loss of the thyroid had caused a slowing down of all bodily processes, so that the patient became apathetic, sluggish in body and mind alike. The rate of the heart beat had dropped, the skin became dry and wrinkled, the temperature subnormal, the speech guttural, and the features broadened and coarsened. Although the removal of their enlarged thyroids had relieved the patients from the symptoms from which they suffered, the operation had converted them into cretins. A serious error had been made, and it was now obvious that the thyroid, far from being useless, performed some very important function. A halt was immediately called on its surgical removal.

The experiment that had unwittingly been made on human beings was now repeated on animals, and although the results were less clear they were sufficient to confirm the view that the thyroid was essential to the health of the body. Soon afterwards the next great advance was made in the form of what is known as 'replacement therapy', that is to say, the making good from an outside source of what the body has lost. Extracts were made from animals' thyroids and administered to other animals that had been deprived of their glands. The result was a dramatic recovery from all the symptoms that had previously been brought about by removal. The new method of treatment was applied to human beings suffering from signs of thyroid insufficiency, and with gratifying results.

It was soon found that if very large doses of thyroid extract were given, the patients suffered from a number of new symptoms which were exactly the reverse of those caused by a deficiency. There was a speeding-up of all the bodily processes, a quickening of the heart-beat and a deepening of respiration. Patients also became very nervous and emotional, and unable to sleep, and they looked at the world through prominent, frightened eyes.

The secretion formed by the thyroid was handed over to the bio-chemists for analysis, and it was found to consist mainly of an organic compound of iodine. To this product the name of thyroxin was given. Clinical medicine worked in close collaboration with bio-chemistry, each adding its quatum to the growing sum of knowledge. Physicians observed that in certain cases of goitre, the symptoms

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

resembled those caused by excess, rather than by a deficiency, of thyroid. To these cases they gave the name of exophthalmic goitre, a name that is descriptive of the prominent eyes which are a feature of this disease. These patients formed a striking contrast to the cretins, those unfortunate beings with a prematurely senile appearance, thick and lumpy bodies, short squat limbs and fingers, and mental development so low that they might almost be regarded as idiots. And between these two extremes lay a number of cases that exhibited a minor degree of deficiency or excess in other words, of hypo-thyroidism, or hyper-thyroidism. The hypo-thyroid group had dry thick wrinkled skins and scurfy hair, the hyper-thyroid group, moist transparent skins and glossy hair. The hypo-thyroid cases were lethargic and tired with any effort; the hyper-thyroid, alert, emotional, energetic and restless.

It will be noted that both temperament and physique are affected by the quantity of thyroid secretion that finds its way into the circulation. The thyroid may, indeed, be looked upon as a sort of governor that controls the speed at which the body and mind work. It also controls the speed of growth, so that a small quantity of thyroid-extract placed daily in an aquarium materially shortens the time required for a tadpole to turn into a frog. It is for this reason that stunted and backward children are sometimes given small doses of thyroid.

If he had been alive at this time there was one old man who would have welcomed the news of the discovery of the internal secretion of the thyroid. Many years previously Brown-Séquard had delivered a lecture before the Société de Biologie in Paris on the internal secretion of the testicle. He had been ailing in health and was on the point of giving up his work when he decided to make certain experiments on himself. Believing that the testicle contained an internal invigorating secretion, he prepared extracts from a dog and injected them into himself. He claimed that he had markedly benefited from the treatment, and that thanks to it he was enabled to continue his work. It was for the purpose of reporting these experiments and their results that he gave his lecture. But the lecture utterly failed to convince his audience and the scientific journals which published an account of it were frankly satirical. 'Professor Brown-Séquard's audience', said one of them, 'appears to have received an impression of the intellectual capacity of

## THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS

the aged scientist very different from that which he, in his elevated frame of mind, evidently expected to produce. The lecture must be regarded as further proof of the necessity for retiring professors who have attained their threescore and ten.'

No lecture could have had a more crushing reception, and yet it contained nothing that need have surprised the audience or the reporters. Since the remotest antiquity men have deprived their domestic animals of their sex-glands for the express purpose of altering their growth and their disposition. The results of castration were well known to the world, and certainly to Brown-Séquard's audience. By castration a bull is changed into a patient ox, a fighting cock into a fat capon, an unmanageable stallion into a gelding. By the same means the papal choirmasters, in former times, prevented the breaking of the voice of their choristers at puberty, and thus retained their services in the cathedral. So likewise did the Eastern pashas provide themselves with eunuchs who could be trusted to guard the seraglios.

With these proofs of the effect of castration so long before them, it is surprising that scientists took so little interest in the subject. This is probably explained by the fact that they believed that the changes brought about by castration were nervous in origin, that is to say, that the removal of the testicles cut the path of nervous impulses travelling from them to the brain, and so altered the animal's sexual behaviour. Having accepted this theory, they did not bother to find out whether it was true or not. But curiosity is endemic amongst scientists, and eventually experiments were made. Bertholdt showed that if a capon was grafted with fragments of testicle the changes that usually follow castration were avoided. Since the grafts were unconnected with the brain their efficacy could not be through nervous impulses, but through the action of an internal secretion. Steinach of Vienna continued this work and proved that both the testicles and the ovaries contained specific secretions, one that pushed the body in the direction of maleness, and the other that pushed it in the direction of femaleness. By grafting testicles and ovaries into young castrated animals of the opposite sex, he was even able to change their outward appearance, the males taking on the characteristics of females, and the females those of males.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

The final stage in the elucidation of the secrets of an endocrine gland is usually the isolation in pure form of its internal secretion. This has now been accomplished in the case of both the testicle and the ovary. It has been found that the ovary forms two secretions, oestrin and progesterone, and that these secretions are responsible for all the changes that take place in the lining membrane of the uterus, both during pregnancy and during menstruation. Another interesting fact that has emerged from experimental work on the internal secretion of the sex-glands is that maleness and femininity are not sharply differentiated entities standing widely apart. In between the masculine type of man and the feminine type of woman are a number of individuals in whom the characteristics of their sex are less strongly marked. As well as the masculine type of man and the feminine type of woman, there is the womanly type of man and the masculine type of woman. Indeed, it might be said that, in most men lurks something of the woman, and in most women something of the man. This is not surprising when we realize that in the body of a man we find certain secretions that are feminine by nature and in the body of a woman those that are male.

The important discoveries made in connection with the thyroid and the sex-glands directed attention to other structures in the body that might possibly form internal secretions. There were two small glands, that had already aroused interest, the suprarenals. These structures, the size of plumstones, lie at the upper pole of the two kidneys; and Addison, a nineteenth-century Guy's Hospital physician, had already made some observations in connection with them. In 1855 he described a group of symptoms that were associated with tuberculosis of the suprarenals. These symptoms consisted of a progressive loss of weight in a patient with increasing muscular weakness. The patient also developed a bronze mottling of the skin. Because he had been the first to draw attention to these symptoms and to correlate them with the destruction of the suprarenals, Addison's name has been attached to this disease.

The other methods of investigation that had proved so fruitful in unravelling the function of the thyroid and the sex-glands were now applied to the suprarenals. The second method of investigation, namely, extirpation of the suprarenal glands from animals, proved of little service since the animals died almost immediately of prostration and con-

## THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS

vulsions. All that could be said as the result of these experiments was that the suprarenals were essential to life. The third line of research, the making of extracts, turned out to be more fruitful. From the glands was obtained a substance, now known as adrenalin, that when injected into an animal caused the contraction of its blood vessels. It was also shown to have the same effect when dabbed on to an open wound, so that it could be used as a means of reducing bleeding from cuts. When given as an injection it acted on the heart, increasing the rate of its beat, and on the breathing, making the respiratory movements deeper. It was next proved that the blood leaving a suprarenal body by its veins contained more adrenalin than the blood flowing in its arteries; in other words, the suprarenals obviously poured their internal secretion into the blood-stream.

The histologists and the comparative anatomists then made their contributions to our knowledge of the suprarenals. Microscopic examination showed that the suprarenal glands consisted of two parts: an outer part called the cortex, and an inner called the medulla. The comparative anatomists now supplied the information that the two parts developed quite separately, and that in fishes the cortex remained an independent organ, completely isolated from the medulla. This allowed of the removal of one part without damaging the other, and eventually led to the discovery that it was the cortex that was the vital portion of the gland and not the medulla.

This does not mean that the medulla is unimportant to an animal; on the contrary, it is this part of the adrenals that forms adrenalin, the only hormone that up till recently has been isolated from the suprarenal. Both portions of the gland play important, although different, roles in maintaining the health of the body, although it is the cortex that is more essential to life. By some authorities the suprarenal glands have been called 'the glands of emergency', and the name is a good one. They supply one of the means by which an animal suddenly mobilizes its resources in a crisis, preparing it for either flight or resistance. Under the stress of anger or fear the suprarenals suddenly begin pouring their secretions into the blood-stream, thus stimulating the activity of the heart, raising the blood-pressure, deepening the respiration, increasing the blood-sugar that has to

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

supply fuel for the muscles, and generally preparing the animal for the flight, or fight, upon which its life may depend. Moreover, the suprarenals not only prepare the animal for the emergency but they make certain that the existence of an emergency is sensed by the animal. In order that the danger may be rightly apprehended, the warning signals of palpitation, sweating and gooseflesh, must be flashed through the animal's body. All these signals, as well as the reactions that they automatically provoke in preparation for fight or escape, are conveyed by the suprarenals to every part of the body through their hormones, or chemical messengers in the blood.

Professor C B Cannon has written a great deal about the energizing action of the suprarenals when they have been stimulated by fear or anger. Nor is it necessary to rely solely on animal experiment to understand this. We all know how the sudden realization that a car is about to run over us galvanizes us into activities that we could never emulate in quieter moments. None of these astounding exertions could have been made without the energizing help of the suprarenals. Nor is fear the only emotion that can galvanize us into activity. Cannon in his book, *Bodily Changes in Pain, Hunger, Fear and Rage*, quotes interesting examples of frenzied feats of endurance performed by people acting under the influence of religious mania. He recalls that in 1374 a widespread outbreak of religious fervour occurred in Germany, in which men and women danced in the streets for hours on end without resting. A similar event happened in Wales in 1740. These feats of endurance were made possible by two mechanisms coming into action, first the switching off of energy from other bodily activities, like digestion, so that it could be used entirely by the muscles, and second, the pouring of adrenalin into the blood-stream.

But the suprarenals have other functions than that of mobilizing the muscular responses of the body. The suprarenals are found to be closely linked up with two other structures, the skin and the sex-glands. The former connection has already been mentioned, for it was seen that the skin became pigmented in Addison's disease. The connection between the suprarenals and the sex-glands is proved by the fact that children with enlarged adrenals are sexually precocious, possessing the sexual development of an adult. It would also appear

## THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS

that the role played by the suprarenals in the sexual development of a woman is somewhat different from that played by them in the sexual development of a man. An overgrowth of the suprarenal cortex produces masculine changes in a woman but not feminine changes in men. A girl with a tumour of the adrenals slowly becomes more and more like a man, first growing hair on the face and body,\*and then developing the voice, mentality and temperament of a male. In great distress of mind she sees herself slowly moving in the direction of the opposite sex, and only if the tumour can be removed will she have any chance of returning to her former condition. The suprarenals may therefore be regarded as glands that play a particularly prominent part in the male. It is for this reason that they have sometimes been called male glands, just as the thyroid which is particularly active in women, is sometimes called a female gland.

One more function of the suprarenals is known. They mobilize the body's resistance to foes that attack it from within, as well as from without. Experiments have shown that an animal with a damaged adrenal cortex is much less resistant to bacterial infection than is another with intact glands. The suprarenals have been well named the glands of emergency, for they take their full share in the body's fight against disease. It need not seem surprising therefore, that after a severe attack of influenza, a patient often shows signs of suprarenal exhaustion in the way of disinclination for any muscular or mental exertion, fatigue, loss of appetite and depression. The taking of tonics may sometimes help, but no tonic can act as a deputy for an exhausted suprarenal gland. Since chemists are now succeeding in extracting the active principle of the cortex, as well as of the medulla, it is possible that in the future such patients will be spared these distressing symptoms by being provided with the hormone of which they have been temporarily depleted.

Interesting as these glands may be, they are far less interesting than a tiny structure tucked under the fore part of the brain, and neglected by the older anatomists, the pituitary. The understanding of this gland is the key to the understanding of the whole endocrine system. Although it is not greater than the size of a pea, it is the master gland controlling the development and the activity of all the others.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

If the pituitary is removed from a young animal, the animal ceases to grow. If it becomes overactive in an individual, he may grow into a giant. Without its help the thyroid and the sex-glands fail to develop, and but for its activity, the whole of the chemistry of the body would take a wrong direction. It is not without reason therefore that it is termed by endocrinologists, the leader of the endocrine orchestra.

Quite apart from the importance of the role played by the pituitary amongst the endocrines, it is remarkable on account of its position alone. It is attached by a long stalk to the base of the brain, and if this stalk is examined microscopically, it is found to contain nerve fibres, which run eventually to the thalamus, an important structure, which (as we shall see in a later chapter) is regarded nowadays as the seat of the emotional life. The pituitary, therefore, is the meeting-ground of secretions and nervous impulses. It is affected by what happens in the thalamus, and in turn it has an effect on that structure. It would scarcely be an exaggeration to say that this tiny gland is the centre of our being. Indeed, the difficulty that now faces physiologists is to understand how so small a structure can perform so many functions, and there has been a disposition lately to suggest that it does not act so much by forming a vast number of secretions, as by activating those of its servants.

A careful examination of the pituitary shows that it is divided into two lobes, an anterior and a posterior, of which the former is the more important. From the anterior lobe have been extracted so many secretions that it is difficult to understand how they can all be formed by such a small gland, secretions controlling growth and exercising a powerful influence over the body's chemistry. The posterior lobe produces a definite secretion which, when extracted and injected into an animal, causes a marked rise in its blood-pressure, and contractions in the bowel, and in the womb. It also produces an increase in the amount of urine excreted. Certain endocrinologists also believe that as well as affecting the body, the posterior lobe of the pituitary also affects the character, and people with a well-developed posterior pituitary are supposed to have artistic ability. It is now believed that the pituitary controls certain rhythmic activities of the body, such as the rhythm of sleeping and waking. It is also believed to be the lever

## THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS

responsible for the rhythm of hibernation, slowing down, during the winter months, all the bodily activities, until they are at such a low ebb that the animal seems scarcely alive.

Many of the descriptions that have been given of the action of the secretions of the internal glands on the body are not so simple as has been described. The action, instead of being direct, is indirect, the pituitary playing a part in them, so that three factors are concerned — the body, the appropriate gland and the pituitary. The full significance of this tripartite action will be shown in the later part of this book in which an ancient philosophy is referred to. This philosophy states that all phenomena are due to the action of three qualities called *gunas*.

Three other endocrine glands of less importance remain to be described, the parathyroid, the thymus and the pineal. Very little is known about any of them and as they are not believed to have a marked influence on character they are only of secondary importance to us. The parathyroids are small glands which, as their name implies, lie in close proximity to the thyroid. If they are removed, the patient suffers from tremors, and the calcium chemistry of his body is upset. The thymus lies inside the chest, just beneath the breast-bone. It is well developed in a child, but generally shrinks in adult life. It is therefore regarded as a gland that is only important in the earlier stages of life, and its chief medical interest lies in the fact that, when it is enlarged, it is sometimes responsible for deaths under anaesthesia. The pineal gland, which lies at the posterior end of the brain, was formerly regarded as the seat of the soul. Modern science has, however, deprived it of its exalted position, and looks upon it as a relic of a structure that exists in certain lizards, a third eye. It will be remembered that the Cyclops possessed a single eye in the centre of their skulls. This eye was more or less in the position of the pineal gland, although the Greek authors placed it a little too far forward. The pineal of an ordinary man is, so far as one knows, of very little importance to him, and the injection of pineal extracts has given variable results.

Brief and incomplete though this description of the endocrine glands may be, it is sufficient to furnish an idea of the manner in which the body is acted upon by its internal secretions. It must be remembered that a close relationship is maintained between the different,

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

members of the endocrine circle, the thyroid and the suprarenals affecting the gonads<sup>1</sup>, and in turn being influenced by them, the thyroid being called into action by the pituitary, and the weakening of one gland being compensated for by the overaction of another, and the harmony of the whole orchestra being maintained by the leadership of the pituitary. Should this harmony be disturbed, should the balance of the secretions be tilted in one direction or another, the health of the whole body suffers. Sometimes this upset in balance reveals itself primarily in a disturbance of body function, and sometimes it is the personality and psychic life of the patient that is more affected. But because body and mind are so closely bound up together, so inextricably interwoven that it is impossible to unravel them, more usually both suffer equally, so that the patient becomes the victim of what may be called a psycho-physical disturbance.

The capacity of an individual to survive depends to a great extent on his ability to adjust himself to changes in his environment. In times of war, a man who has hitherto been engaged in a sedentary occupation, finds himself suddenly pitchforked into an entirely new life. His diet, his manner of living and his emotional environment all undergo a sudden change. Either he must adapt himself to his new circumstances, or failing to do so, he must suffer a mental and physical breakdown. His success or failure in reacting to the novel conditions in which he finds himself will depend to a great extent on the adaptability shown by his endocrine system. If he is successful, certain glands will respond by an increase in function, and a new equilibrium will be reached which often may seem to him preferable to the old. Such a man, at the conclusion of the war, will find it difficult to return to his office, and will make every effort to exchange his former sedentary occupation for some more active and open-air existence. If, on the other hand, his endocrine system fails to accommodate itself to the new mode of existence created by active service, he will suffer in bodily and mental health, and finally be discharged as a case of nervous breakdown, or neurasthenia.

The thought that the welfare of body and mind is so dependent on the fine chemistry of the internal secretions may come as a shock to

<sup>1</sup> The Sex-glands

## THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS

many. Our dignity as human beings may be balanced on the fine point of our thyroids. Should some accident befall it in the early days of its development, the result may be a cretin, a creature misshapen and hopeless, dwelling in a twilight of consciousness; should, on the other hand, it be stimulated into overaction, a nervous, emotionally unstable, tremulous, restless patient is produced. It is a gruesome thought that about three and a half grains of iodine stand between us and idiocy, that we are to such a large extent not what we want to be, but what this subtle chemistry of our glands makes us.

Should a medieval alchemist return to earth and learn what modern science has to say on this subject, he would show no surprise. For the alchemist there existed no hard and fast division between the realm of the material and the spiritual. Instead he pictured an intermediate state between matter and mind, a psychic realm of subtle bodies to which a mental, as well as a material manifestation was appropriate. To him the soul was something material, but of a materiality infinitely finer and more subtle than the substance of which the body was made. 'All these secretions which you chemists have discovered', he would say, 'we knew about in principle. They are the subtle substances that permeate all the grosser matters. Even the earth which you moderns consider dead is not actually dead but is permeated by subtle matter. This is the earth's life and spirit which are nourished by the stars and in turn give nourishment to all living things, as a mother gives life to the child that she shelters in her womb.'

So the finer chemistry of the body would cause no difficulty to the alchemist, who made no hard and fast distinction between the outer manifestation of his art, the transmutation of the baser metals into gold, and the esoteric side of his calling, the transmutation of the grosser side of his nature into the finer matters of the spirit. He would rather find in the discovery of the endocrine secretions and of the vitamins a confirmation of his own teaching, that subtle bodies permeated all grosser matters of nature.

And in linking up the endocrine secretions with the vitamins he would have been right, for these two categories of substances have much in common. Not only do they share the characteristic that a very small quantity of each can bring about immense and far-reaching

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

consequences, but they sometimes exert a similar action. It has been proved for example that a similar body to that found in the ovary, oestrin, can be extracted from plants, and that daffodils can be made to flower all the year round by the use of human secretions. The old distinction drawn between active principles obtained from the body and those obtained from plants has therefore broken down. This justifies us in our use of plant extracts in medicine.

So far we have considered mainly the action of the internal secretions on the body. In the following chapter an attempt will be made to indicate how they may influence the mind.

## CHAPTER IV

### HUMAN TYPES

THE study of human types is no new one. From the most ancient times efforts have been made to divide men into different categories, not according to race, but to temperament. When the theory of the 'humours' of the body dominated physiology, it was natural that the classification attempted should be based on the predominance of one of the four humours and that men should be divided into the sanguine, the bilious, the lymphatic and the nervous. But long before the time of Galen, who sponsored this division by means of humours, the Hindus had described three kinds of women, whom they likened to the deer, the mare and the elephant, and three kinds of men, pictured as the hare, the bull and the horse. These animal analogues summarized in picture form certain peculiarities of the skin, hair, voice, genital organs, general physique and temperament of men and women, and it will be noted that all of these characteristics are those that are capable of being produced by differences in endocrine constitution.

The search for a basis for classification continues at the present day. Kretschmer has attempted a division into types, in accordance with certain physical and psychic characteristics, and Jung in accordance with psychic qualities alone. Jung's main two groups are the extraverts and introverts, the former being individuals whose main preoccupation is with the world around them, the latter, those whose attention is chiefly focused on the world within, upon their own feelings, reactions, fantasies and thoughts. Jung subdivides these two main categories according to the psychic activity that plays a predominant part in the individual's decisions and mode of living.

This provides four classes, men whose lives are ruled by thinking, feeling, sensation and intuition respectively. In all, eight categories of men are thus described. But although Jung's method of classification shows ingenuity and is an intuitive achievement, few of his

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

psychological colleagues regard it with favour. Professor William Brown denies the validity of even his primary division into extravert and introvert. In his opinion, the person who is turned in on himself, is the victim of unsolved complexes and fixations, and must be regarded as pathological. Such a person is so entangled by inner difficulties that he is not only incapable of seeing the world outside, but himself as he is. The division into extravert and introvert, according to Professor Brown, is, therefore, only a separation of the normal from the abnormal. Whilst it is true that one person is more concerned with external, and another with internal, events, this should be regarded as a classification of interests, and not of individuals.

The homoeopathic school of medicine founded by Hahnemann, has also interested itself in the question of human types. This interest was aroused by the observation that certain men and women when they were ill showed a tendency to develop one set of symptoms, whilst others tended to develop another. It was also noted that patients reacted to the same drugs in a very different manner. To the homoeopathic doctor, therefore it became of paramount importance to discover the type of patient with whom he had to deal. It was indeed far more necessary to know what sort of man was ill, than what sort of illness he suffered from. Only after the patient's type had been discovered would it be possible to prescribe the appropriate remedy.

An allopathic doctor can, if he retains an open mind, learn much from a homoeopathist. Founded originally as a protest against the materialism of nineteenth-century medicine, homoeopathy has avoided some of the errors into which the allopathic school of medicine has fallen. It has never made the mistake of losing sight of the patient in the treatment of his disease, of looking at the part, without any reference to the whole. But the homoeopathic practitioner's attempts to divide humanity according to its susceptibility to different derangements, and its response to different drugs, does not provide a broad enough basis for a science of types. It is a practical device that has been found serviceable in homoeopathic medicine, rather than a method for general application.

As so often happens, medical science has been forced to retrace its steps in order to discover a sounder foundation for the classification

## HUMAN TYPES

of humanity. Having discarded psychological divisions, medical men are now searching for new methods of classifying men. Galen's chemistry of 'humours' has been resuscitated in the form of endocrine secretions. It is with this modern version of 'the chemistry of the soul' that we shall now deal.

More and more it is being realized that the general contours of the body, the length of the arms and legs, consistency of the skin, the sound of the voice, and, what is of special interest, the pattern of the emotional life are, to a great extent, conditioned by the endocrine glands. An attempt has therefore been made to classify individual men and women according to the particular gland that appears to be dominant in their endocrine constitution, and, in certain cases, according to the gland that appears to be in abeyance. In this way, men and women are labelled adrenal-centred, thyroid-centred, pituitary-centred, gonad-centred or thymus-centred, indicating that in their particular make-up this or that gland, or this or that combination of glands, plays a particularly important part. This method of classification is as yet crude and unskilful, for much has yet to be learnt about the secretions and their action on the psycho-physical complex that constitutes man. Moreover, it is only in certain individuals that one gland, or combination of glands, is sufficiently in the ascendancy to serve as a basis for classification. In many people they would appear to be so well balanced that it is difficult to attach to individuals clearly marked labels. Despite this, the new attempt at classification rests on securer foundations than did its predecessors, and some day it may result in a real science of types.

Even although that day has not yet arrived, and even although many of our present-day theories will have to be revised in the light of new knowledge, it will be advisable to take a general view of the present situation. The best method of doing so will be to discuss the criteria by means of which the various endocrine types are distinguished, and then provide illustrative examples taken from amongst historical personages. Although the data for arriving at any conclusion concerning the endocrine type of such personages is very limited, they are sometimes sufficient to allow of him or her being placed, with a fair degree of assurance, in one or other category. Much of the

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

material used in this chapter has been obtained from two books, *The Glands regulating Personality* by Dr. Berman, and *The Glands of Destiny* by Dr. Geikie Cobb, and to these authors I acknowledge my indebtedness.

*The Pituitary Type.* The presence of two apparently antagonistic principles in the pituitary makes the portrayal of the pituitary-centred man or woman particularly difficult. Although this theory rests on very slender evidence, it is generally believed that the anterior lobe determines the more masculine qualities of an individual, and the posterior the more feminine. Perhaps a little unfairly, Berman summarizes the masculine qualities as 'superlative brain tone and action, good all-round growth and harmonious general function', and the feminine as 'susceptibility to tender emotions, sentimentalism and emotionalism'. Those who may regard this discrimination as prejudiced may take comfort in the fact that the predominance of the anterior over the posterior lobe is not the prerogative of a man, or the predominance of the posterior over the anterior the inevitable fate of a woman. Many instances could be given of women whose lives, according to this theory, were controlled by the anterior, and of men who were very much under the influence of the posterior lobe of the pituitary.

Correlated with these psychic qualities and more easily recognized, are the changes in structure brought about by the pituitary. An active anterior pituitary is generally, but not always, associated with tallness, a long skull, a resolute jaw and well-marked supra-orbital ridges. The teeth are well developed, the arms and legs hairy, and the feet and hands large. Posterior pituitary predominance is more likely to be associated with a short and thick-set body, a head that seems too large for the trunk, and hair scanty on the body, but plentiful on the head. Men of this type are reputed to develop a paunch early in life, and to be temperamentally less stable than their anterior-pituitary controlled colleagues. In view of this description it is not surprising that Berman concludes that many musical geniuses and writers have belonged to this type; for example, Sir James Barrie. Men of this type should be contrasted with forceful virile individuals, like Abraham Lincoln, who, through predominance of their anterior

## HUMAN TYPES

pituitaries, have the power to dominate their fellows and to hold to a predetermined course whatever the difficulties that may have to be encountered.

The pituitary gland lies in a special hollow in the base of the skull, and is surrounded on three sides by unyielding bony walls. Should it become enlarged it may prove too big for its casing, with resulting damage and disturbance. The pituitary is indeed particularly liable to undergo changes at various periods in its possessor's life. Some of the ills that may result from pituitary errors have already been described, on the one hand, giantism, and on the other, dwarfism. Disfunction of the pituitary may, however, manifest itself in changes outside the skeletal system, and endocrinologists are fond of pointing to historical personages, whose careers started brilliantly, but ended disastrously, on account of a failing pituitary. Whether all the examples that have been given are authentic or not is highly doubtful, but it is quite likely that a gland that has played a large part in shaping an individual's early life may, either through exhaustion, or accident, begin to fail after he has passed his prime. Should this happen, a man or woman who, in earlier years has been an example of hyper-pituitarism, may, within a comparatively short time, display symptoms of the opposite state of hypo-pituitarism.

Of all the examples that have been given of a person whose pituitary failed him at a critical period of his life, the most famous is that of Napoleon Bonaparte. Berman has carefully scrutinized the emperor's career, temperament and physical features, and has come to the conclusion that this view of Napoleon is correct. Fortunately we know many details of his private, as well as of his public life. From the diary of his physician, Antommarchi, we glean also many facts concerning his imperial master's health, and finally we possess a report of the post-mortem made in St. Helena.

Many portraits of Napoleon, painted at various periods of his life, survive, and all of them portray the same general physical characteristics, both the sharply-cut features and the determined-looking jaw. His height was only five feet, his hands small and plump, his hair black, silky and straight, and his complexion swarthy. Although Napoleon's small stature does not favour this view, Berman is of the opinion

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

that his early portraits are those of a pituitary-driven man, with strong adrenal development. Adreno-centred men are usually swarthy, but since Napoleon was a Corsican it would be unjustifiable to put much weight on his possession of a dark complexion.

We know that, although he gave way to storms of temper, Napoleon was controlled by his intellect, rather than by his feelings. He had little love for poetry, music or painting, and possessed not a glimmering of religious feeling. The thyroid, and the posterior pituitary, were, therefore, not overactive in him, a fact that can be correlated with his abnormally slow pulse. Nor, in spite of the scandal whispered behind his back, is there reason to believe that sexuality was an important ingredient in his make-up. Indeed, when we remember how many women were prepared to 'fall for' the greatest personage in Europe, it is surprising that his infidelities to Josephine were not even more numerous than they were.

But although Napoleon must be regarded as a pituitary-centred man, all was not well with that superlatively important gland. Quite early in his career, symptoms arose that suggest a certain instability in its functioning. Whilst, in the interval between his brain-storms, his intellect remained dominant, and he showed great mathematical and logical ability, there were days when he suffered from mental discomfiture, followed by severe headaches. It should be noted also that Antommarchi records that his master was bothered by micturition troubles, so that he could not sleep for more than a few hours at a stretch, or remain in the saddle long without dismounting. While some other explanation may have been at the back of this bladder trouble, it is well known that the pituitary is connected with the secretion of urine, and that there is a disease of the posterior lobe, known as diabetes insipidus, which is characterized by the passage of excessive amounts of urine. One other possible sign that the pituitary was not healthy is the fact that his marriage with Josephine was barren, and that only two illegitimate children are known to have resulted from his liaisons. Modern research has shown that the commonest cause of infertility in men is a fault in pituitary function.

So we see Napoleon as a man dependent on a pituitary that was

## HUMAN TYPES

showing signs of unstable action even in the earlier part of his career. As we trace this career towards its close, we find an increase in these signs of pituitary instability, and finally we witness a breakdown in its functioning. Even before he was crowned emperor it was noted that in spite of his activity he was beginning to put on flesh. Soon afterwards he developed a paunch, with fatty deposits round the hips and the thighs. And with the deterioration in the fitness of the body came a weakening of the intellectual faculties. The keen calculating judgment shown at Austerlitz gave place to the vacillating indecision that kept him lingering in Moscow until winter had begun. No longer was he capable of making those lightning decisions that had made him the finest strategist in Europe. For short periods the masterful mind might reassert itself, but the end of the career of the 'intolerable egoist of Europe' was in sight. There is no need even to postulate that Waterloo was lost to France because on the eve of it the Emperor suffered from a fit. The battle was lost long previously when a tiny gland, the size of a pea, began to show ominous signs of disrepair.

Those who accompanied their exiled Emperor to St. Helena suffered more than the loss of their homes, they witnessed the rapid decline of the man who had been their god. His physical and mental powers deteriorated so rapidly that they soon discovered that they were living with an utterly different man. He became fat and flabby, sulky, indolent and indifferent. At times he gave way to storms of abuse, then sank back into gloomy silence.

After his death the findings at the post-mortem were published by an English physician. 'The whole surface of the body was deeply covered with fat. Over the sternum, where generally the bone is very superficial, the fat was upwards of an inch deep, and an inch and a half to two inches on the abdomen. There was scarcely a hair on the body, and that on the head was fine and silky. The whole genital system (very small) seemed to exhibit a physical cause for the absence of sexual desire, and the chastity which had been stated to characterize the deceased during his stay at St. Helena. The skin was noticed to be very white and delicate, as were the hands and arms. Indeed the whole body was slender and effeminate.' No better picture could have been given of the changes that take place in the body after a pituitary has

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

failed. The bright star in which the Emperor had so fervently believed had set before its time.

*The Thyroid Type.* Since the thyroid is believed to be intimately connected with the expression of the emotions, and since woman is commonly regarded as being more emotional than man, examples of thyroid-centred individuals are more usually selected from the feminine sex. This is, however, quite arbitrary and it would be possible to discover just as good instances of predominance of the thyroid amongst males as amongst females, for although severe degrees of hyper-thyroidism are commoner amongst women, lesser degrees are frequently found in men. This is particularly likely to be the case in men of strongly artistic temperament, such as poets, and Keats has been given by some writers as an example of a thyroid-centred person.

The activity of the thyroid, like that of the pituitary, is liable to vary at different epochs in life. Many children are definitely sub-thyroid until puberty, and then suddenly their whole temperament appears to undergo a change. Previously they have been listless, easily tired, backward and difficult children, and then suddenly with the onset of puberty (in their case often late), all these defects disappear. On the mental side the improvement is shown by increased intelligence, quicker powers of observation, better attention and a brighter outlook on life, and on the physical, by the shaping of the body into the slender delicate outlines of the young adult. Even the face changes, lengthening, becoming more alive, with brightening of the eyes and clearing of the complexion. The whole tempo of life is changing under the stimulating action of adequate thyroid secretion.

The thyroid as we have seen is the accelerator of the body chemistry and of the emotional life. It intervenes not only at the crucial time of passage from childhood to adolescence, but at the other critical periods in its owner's life. This is one of the reasons why the thyroid has been regarded as being an essentially feminine gland. The female organism makes a more adventurous voyage through life than does the male, being called upon to undertake the stupendous adventures of pregnancy and childbirth. And even if the fulfilment of this central function of her being is denied her, every month a woman must prepare herself for the possibility of it happening. During the whole of her repro-

## HUMAN TYPES

ductive life the generative organs of a woman are never static, but every moon go through a complete cycle of changes in anticipation of what may never happen. Keeping step with these changes there is an ebb and flow in the activity of that accelerator of her body's chemistry, the thyroid gland. During pregnancy the extra work thrown on the thyroid is sometimes made manifest by the appearance of a swelling of the neck, by a speeding up of the pulse rate and by a tendency to perspire at the least exertion. Even menstruation may be associated with the same symptoms of hyper-thyroidism.

It has been said that excessive action of the thyroid is likely to lead to emotional outbursts, nervousness, insomnia and psychic instability. The converse is also true; a severe psychological crisis may be followed by an enlargement of the gland. On questioning a patient suffering from exophthalmic goitre she will frequently state that the symptoms and swelling of the neck were first noticed after some distressing experience, such as the death of a husband or child. In this association of an enlarged thyroid with an emotional shock, we have one more instance of the interdependence of mind and body, mind acting on body and body on mind.

Just as the pituitary may become exhausted by the wear and tear imposed on it by life, so may the thyroid, after playing a prominent part in its owner's affairs, later show signs of failure. Geikie Cobb in his analysis of Henry VIII gives it as his opinion that the chief levers that controlled the royal machinery were, on the psychological side, a sense of inferiority, and on the endocrinological, an active thyroid-pituitary combination. Towards the end of Henry's life his thyroid began to give out, he put on flesh, became lazy, puffy under the eyes, and, as revealed by Holbein's portrait, lost the outer halves of his eyebrows. This thinning of the outer parts of the eyebrows is regarded as being characteristic of hypo-thyroidism. There was one compensation attached to the diminution of the activity of the royal thyroid; His Majesty became distinctly more manageable by his wives.

*The Adreno-centred Personalities.* Berman has termed the adrenal controlled man or woman 'the Atlas of the twentieth-century World'. Perhaps the term would be more complete if he had added the word Western to his definition, since it is the Westerner who is generally

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

energetic. The adrenals are organs for the mobilization of physical and mental energy, for the combatting of shocks, and for the meeting of emergencies. They work overtime in war, and since even in the intervals between wars Western man still remains at loggerheads with his environment the adrenals are rarely at rest. The skin furnishes one of the chief clues to the adrenal personality. It is darkly pigmented and the hair on it is thick, coarse and dry. The scalp usually descends low on to the forehead and the body is well covered. Psychologically, adrenal people are characterized by a capacity for dogged persistence and super-effort. They are the Shackletons of the world, the great explorers, and the holders of Marathon records. Their adrenals have made them what they are by fitting them for great physical and mental efforts.

In a woman, an active adrenal tends to swing her in the direction of masculinity. The advance of emancipated womanhood into the realms that once were inhabited only by men has made a call on the activity of her adrenals and the glands have generally responded. The modern world is full of vigorous, persistent, manly women, furnishing yet another example of the influence of activity on structure.

*The Gonad-centred Type.* The action of the internal secretion of the sex-glands upon the body and mind is well known. The stronger the sex-glands the more emphatically is a man stamped a man and a woman a woman. A man even more than a woman is dependent on an adequate complement of sex secretion, for the body itself has a distinct bias in the direction of femininity. It is for this reason that, when the supply of internal secretion is deficient, the man is more likely to become womanly, than the woman to become manly. Only if the woman's adrenals become more active than before is the latter metamorphosis likely to take place.

Male eunuchoids are distinguished by their lack of initiative and push. They are usually gentle, unassuming weaklings, who even when grown up retain many of the attributes of childhood. Such men lack the drive of the male, and are unambitious and retiring. Because the onset of puberty slows down the growth of the long bones, and because puberty is late when the sex hormones are deficient, the eunuchoid is often taller than his fellows. In later life he puts on flesh and shows a tendency to become gross and flabby.

## HUMAN TYPES

The gonad-centred man is the reverse of all this. He is thick-set and muscular, like his adreno-centred brother, inclined to hairiness, exhibiting in superabundance all the characteristic traits of the male. Usually, although not always, this make-up is associated with strong sexual desire and capacity.

As the gonado-centric male exhibits strongly the distinguishing marks of his sex, so does the gonado-centric woman exhibit the characteristics of hers. Geikie Cobb draws a comparison between two well-known sovereigns, Queen Elizabeth of England and Queen Catherine of Russia. Both of the queens are known in history to have been successful and graceful personalities, who managed the affairs of State with efficiency and skill. Yet the methods they used in controlling their ministers were entirely different. Elizabeth, in spite of her liaison with Leicester and her vain display of dancing before the Spanish ambassador, deliberately discarded her womanhood in order to rule as a man. She was a pituitary-centred female who gradually developed into a sharp-featured and skilled politician. Catherine, on the other hand, remained throughout her life a woman who employed for her own ends the efficient instruments of her own sex. Empress although she was, she was still in essence a woman and a mother. It is true that she heartily disliked her offspring, the unpleasant Paul, but her feeling for her lovers, in the latter part of her life, was that of a mother for her sons. Her essentially feminine nature revealed itself, not only in her innate dislike of cruelty and war, but in her gentleness and consideration for all the men who served her. If she was guilty of sexual excess — as she undoubtedly was — it must be remembered that she lived in a court where moral ethics were never discussed.

*Thymo-centric Personalities.* As has already been said but little is known of the internal secretion of the thymus gland, other than that it functions mainly in childhood. Some endocrinologists are of the opinion that if the thymus does not become less active at puberty, the work of the other endocrine glands is deranged. When this happens something of the child is perpetuated at the expense of the mature man or woman. To quote Berman. In women the external manifestation of the thymo-centric personality may be limited to thinness, delicacy of the skin, narrow waist, rather poorly developed breasts, arched thighs and scanty

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

hair, with scarcity and delayed menstruation'. Or there may be obesity associated with juvenility, if, for one reason or another, the pituitary functions poorly.

Berman regards Oscar Wilde as an example of the thymo-centric male, and in support of his view quotes Henri de Regnier's description of that unfortunate poet. At the time of his meeting with him in Paris 'this foreigner was tall and of great corpulence. A high complexion seemed to give still greater width to his clean-shaven face. It was the unbearded (*glabre*) face that one sees on coins. The hands . . . were fleshy and plump'. Another sign of thymus dominance was Oscar Wilde's voice, a beautiful tenor when under control, high-pitched and strident when he was irritated. Such a quality of voice would be produced by a larynx that had failed to develop after puberty. There was something of the child that persisted in both the body and mind of Wilde.

From a strictly scientific standpoint this attempt to portray different personalities in terms of endocrine endowment is unjustifiable. As yet we know so little about the influence of the endocrine glands on character that the preceding sketches of individual men and women whose lives have been regarded as being controlled by this or that gland are speculative, rather than scientific studies. Until we are able to identify and measure the small quantities of secretion circulating in the blood and express our findings in an endocrine formula, we will only be able to recognize gross disturbances of the endocrine balance, and will be able to say little or nothing concerning the endocrine pattern of the normal man or woman. At the present moment all that we really know is that the endocrine pattern of an individual is a very important factor in determining his character.

## CHAPTER V

### THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

IN the previous two chapters a description has been given of the endocrine glands, and their bearing on temperament was discussed. Temperament is a word that admits of various interpretations, and many attempts have been made to define it. For our purpose we shall accept McDougall's description of it as 'those personal qualities that are determined by the chemical influences of the body metabolism exerted upon the general working of the brain or nervous system'.

So far we have considered only the chemical influences. It now remains to deal with that upon which these chemical influences work, the brain and the central nervous system. Very primitive organisms are without any central nervous system, all the messages of the body being conveyed by the blood-stream, or, in the case of unicellular organisms, by the movement of the more fluid contents of the cell. But such means of communication are comparatively slow and for quick delivery and response some speedier method is required. This is provided by the development of the central nervous system. Physiologists invariably liken this to a telegraph system, in which the brain represents the General Post Office, the spinal cord the main distributing centres, and the nerves running from the spinal cord to various parts of the body, the telegraph wires. This picture is a good one and can be filled in with still greater detail. Just as in a busy telephone exchange there are special lines reserved, some for incoming, and others for outgoing calls, so also in the central nervous system there are sensory tracks that convey only incoming messages from the body to headquarters, and outgoing tracks that carry messages to the muscles.

Without straining the metaphor between the central nervous system and the post office unduly, it would also be possible to say that in the body the telegraphic and telephonic communications are divided

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

into two more or less distinct systems, the voluntary, which we may liken to the facilities afforded to private individuals and businesses, and the autonomic system, which is mainly concerned with administration. The voluntary system is engaged in carrying to their destination outgoing messages from the brain and the spinal cord, and also in conveying incoming messages (sensations) from various parts of the body. The autonomic, sympathetic, or vegetative system, as it has variously been called, is relieved of all this work and acts as a kind of accessory nervous organization that deals entirely with involuntary messages. Its function is to regulate those parts of the body that are not under the control of the will: that is to say, that are purely automatic in action. This accessory autonomic system is of special importance in connection with the endocrine glands, for it is through it that the work of the glands is regulated; for example, stimulation of the sympathetic nerve fibre running to the suprarenal glands results in an increased output in secretion. The action is reciprocal, for an increase of adrenalin in the blood reacts in turn upon the sympathetic system, heightening its response to stimulation.

The sympathetic system regulates not only the action of the endocrine glands, but also that of all other organs not under the control of the will, such as the heart, the blood-vessels, and the digestive system. In describing the suprarenals it was said that the sympathetic system was the physical basis for the appreciation and expression of the emotions. Long before the function of the sympathetic system was known, the solar plexus was reputed to be the seat of the emotions. The solar plexus is one of the largest networks or plexuses formed by the sympathetic system. It lies just below the diaphragm in the 'pit of the stomach'. This linking of the solar plexus with the emotions is fully justified by modern discoveries.

Although it has been described as a separate concern, the sympathetic system is closely connected with the brain and spinal cord. Anatomically, it is intimately linked up with the voluntary system of nerves. If we trace the path of the fine nerve fibres of the sympathetic system and follow them as they travel in the direction of the brain, we find that they lose themselves finally in the thalamus, a great mass of grey matter that lies at the base of the brain. This

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

structure is of particular interest to us. Modern physiologists believe that it is the thalamus, rather than the solar plexus, that should be regarded as the seat of the emotions. But as the sympathetic nerves (including the solar plexus) and the basal nuclei are all parts of one system the localizing of emotions in the thalamus is merely the shifting of the centre of gravity from one part of the system to another.

In its work of controlling the mechanism of the body the sympathetic system makes use of two sorts of fibres, one set of which stimulates and the other diminishes the activity of an organ. The sympathetic nerves running to most of the organs in the body contain both varieties of fibres, known to physiologists as pressor and depressor fibres. An excellent example of their mode of action is provided by the nerves that regulate the tone of the blood-vessels. Experiment has shown that if the pressor fibres running to an artery are stimulated electrically, the blood-vessel becomes constricted, and that if the depressor fibres are stimulated, it dilates. Normally the tone of the blood-vessels is maintained by a balanced action of the two sets of fibres, the one opposing the other. Should more blood be required for the efficient working of an organ, the depressor fibres immediately come into action, overpowering the influence of the opposing fibres and flooding the organ with blood.

Because the sympathetic system is affected by the emotions, the action of the pressor and depressor fibres may be called into being by psychological states. The pallor of the face associated with fear, and blushing caused by shyness are examples of pressor and depressor action respectively resulting from a psychic stimulus. In a precisely similar manner, the frequency of the heart-beat is regulated by the opposing action of two sets of fibres, one of which tends to increase it, and the other to diminish it. It is scarcely necessary to point out that the heart-beat is readily affected by emotional states. The body is full of these balanced actions, ready at an instant's notice to meet the requirements of life by either diminishing or heightening activity. Normally they are self-regulating mechanisms influenced by the emotions, but not subject to voluntary control. Only in exceptional individuals, and as a result of special training, can the sympathetic system be

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

brought under the influence of will. These cases of voluntary control over the sympathetic system will be mentioned later. (See Chapter X.)

So far we have discussed only the gross structure of the central nervous system, but, before proceeding further, it will be necessary to say a few words about its *finer structure*, revealed by the microscope. The unit out of which the whole of the central nervous system is built up is the branched nerve-cell, or 'neurone'. There are many branched cells in the body, but the nerve-cell or neurone is distinguished by the fact that one of its branches is enormously elongated into the nerve-fibre. The central cores of these elongated branches, known as axis cylinders, are the conductors along which the nervous impulse travels, the shorter branches of the neurone serve to make connections with neighbouring nerve-cells. Usually a message from the brain has to pass through several relays of cells and axis cylinders before it reaches its destination in the muscles. In this process we again find a close parallel with the telephone system, in which the necessity for laying down innumerable wires is obviated by the employment of an operator, whose work it is to connect a subscriber with any branch he requires by "plugging in" on a switchboard. It may indeed happen that in order to speak from, say, York to Torquay, connections will have to be made at several different switchboards, so that neither in the telephone system nor in the body does a message travel along a single continuous wire. And as telephone wires are carefully insulated by means of a rubber and silk covering, to prevent leakage of current, so in the body are the nerve fibres insulated by special sheaths, where fat and connective tissue play the part of rubber and silk.

For the sake of mutual protection many different neurones are packed together into a single nerve, and they travel together during the major part of their course, only parting company when they near their destination. From the brain and the spinal cord (its prolongation down the backbone), a vast number of these complicated cables of nerve-fibres are given off, in the form of the cranial and spinal nerves.

When examined under the microscope, the brain and the spinal cord are also found to be composed of innumerable nerve-cells and

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

fibres held together by a minimum of packing, and covered by their own special membranes, or meninges. The whole of the central nervous system is, therefore, nothing but a vast network of paths for nerve impulses, a network that is so complicated that in comparison with it even London's telephone system appears to be a simple affair. In spite of the enormous difficulties the work entailed, scientists have, by painstaking research, succeeded in tracing many of the paths taken by nerve impulses in the body. It has even been possible to state how many relays occur in the passage of a sensation, say, from the hand to the brain, and how many in the return journey from the brain to the hand muscles.

When we come to discuss the parts played by the brain and the spinal cord in the control of the voluntary movements of the body, it may be said that in general the spinal cord deals with movements that are more or less automatic in character (e.g. walking), and the brain with those that are deliberate or intentional. If the sole of the foot is lightly tickled, the toes bend downwards and the foot is rapidly withdrawn. This is an automatic movement and no effort of will enters into it. An automatic movement of this nature is termed a reflex action. Another reflex action is the spasm that is provoked in the eyelid when a speck of dust enters the eye. What really happened when the sole of the foot was tickled was that the stimulus sent an impulse along the sensory nerve-fibres to the cord. The stimulus then passed by means of their interlocking branches from the sensory to the motor-cells of the cord, so that it was transmitted back to the muscles of the foot. As a result of this certain muscles contracted and caused the foot to be withdrawn. A stimulus that started to the cord as a sensation returned therefore to the foot as a command to withdraw. That the whole action was mechanical is shown by the fact that it could equally well have been provoked had the subject been asleep. It would, of course, have been possible for him to have contracted the same muscles by an act of will. In this case the action would have been a voluntary one in which the brain had played a part. This, indeed, is the history of many actions that are automatic, such as walking, which must be learnt before it becomes automatic. In other words, a young child, by deliberate effort and directed attention,

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

must learn to move his legs, and then, often quite suddenly, the spinal cord takes over the work from the brain, and he has learnt to walk. If it were not for this power to delegate to the spinal cord what it had mastered, the brain would be so fully occupied with other functions that it would have no time left over for the work for which it alone is fitted.

As will be seen later, there is a school of psychology that puts so much emphasis on automatic action that it seeks to interpret the whole of life as a series of reflexes. According to the views of the Behaviourist school, not only movements, but feeling and thought are nothing but a succession of reflexes occurring in the network of fibres that make up the substance of the brain. This subject will be dealt with later, but in the meantime it may be pointed out that this view of the Behaviourist school of psychology, extreme though it be, is not without some justification from the point of view of brain structure. Indeed, it may be conceded that the physiology, as well as the anatomy of the brain, so far as they go, supports the Behaviourists' thesis. The brain's activity, like that of the cord, depends to a very large extent on the stream of impulses that reach it from the outside world. If the brain could be entirely deprived of the stimuli that reach it along the various sensory paths of the body, it is doubtful whether it would continue to work, for its function seems to be that of responding to, rather than of initiating activity. Michael Foster records the case of a boy who suffered from cutaneous anaesthesia, who was blind in one eye and deaf. His sole tie with the outside world, apart from the weak links of taste and smell, was through his remaining eye. When this was covered, he immediately went to sleep. The stream of impulses that reach the brain along the sensory track of the central nervous system may therefore be looked upon as a sort of driving belt to the brain. Speed up the impressions reaching it, and the brain becomes more active, slow them down and it becomes more sluggish, remove the belt altogether, and consciousness disappears. But this statement must be qualified. An uninterrupted flow of stimuli from the outside world is not an essential to thought. The memory of past stimulation may act as an incentive to mental activity, as well as external impressions received at that actual moment. A man sitting in a dark and silent

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

room may still remain mentally active, the flow of vivid memories stored in the records office of his brain taking the place of fresh visual and auditory impressions.

In a non-technical work it would obviously be impossible to give more than an elementary description of the great co-ordinating and regulating centre of the central nervous system, the brain. All that can be attempted is to give sufficient information concerning its structure to allow of later discussions being understood. As an introduction to the subject, it will be useful to look at the early stages of the brain's development. At a very primitive stage in the embryo's life, the head end of the streak that later is to form the brain and spinal cord, swells out into three so-called primary vesicles. These three swellings are the forerunners of the fore-, middle- and hind-brain respectively. Like the spinal cord, of which they are really an expansion, these three swellings surround a central canal, which later becomes the brain's cavities or ventricles. All the complex structures of the brain are eventually formed by the thickening of the walls surrounding these central cavities.

From the thickened walls of the lowermost swelling are developed the hind-brain, that is, the medulla oblongata (mainly concerned with such bodily functions as the regulation of the blood-vessels and of the body's temperature), and the cerebellum (controlling complicated movements such as maintaining balance in walking). From the thickened walls of the middle swelling are formed the mid-brain, in which run the great bundles of nerve-fibres connecting the fore-brain with the rest of the body, as well as with the cerebellum. From the foremost swelling is developed the fore-brain or that part of the brain in which we are more especially interested. This, in turn, may be subdivided into two parts, one of which is chiefly concerned with the life of thought, and the other with the life of feeling. Thought is one of the functions of the two cerebral hemispheres, which start as two separate outgrowing buds from the fore-brain. These outgrowths finally become so large in the case of man, that they overwhelm, and bury beneath them, the whole of the fore-brain from which they have arisen. It is indeed this enormous development of the two cerebral hemispheres that distinguishes the human brain from that of members of the animal

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

world. Only amongst the apes can there be found anything that is comparable to that which has occurred in man.

The degree of development of the cerebral outgrowths may indeed be regarded as a measure of an animal's intelligence, for as we progress in our survey from such lowly creatures as birds and reptiles, whose cerebral development is insignificant, to the lower mammals, and thence to the apes and man, we find that with each stage there is an increase in the bulk and complexity of the cerebral hemispheres. To be more precise, it is the surface of these structures that is of importance from the point of view of intelligence, for it is here that we find the coating of grey matter which may be regarded as the physical basis of thought. And because there must be a limit to the surface area of the brain that a man is able to carry, Nature has overcome the difficulty by throwing this surface into a number of folds, or convolutions, thereby increasing the amount of grey matter available. By this means the thinking area of the brain is doubled without any addition having been made to its size. As a result, men of great intellect are not necessarily men with big heads, but if their brains are examined, they are generally found to be more deeply furrowed than are the brains of their less highly endowed fellows.

Even if the fore-brain had not given origin to the thinking apparatus of man, it would still be of importance, because in it are situated the great nuclei that are the centre of the emotional life. If we cut horizontally across the central cavity, known as the third ventricle, we find lying in the mass of white substance, two grey ovoid masses, nearly two inches long, known as the thalami. These constitute the largest collections of grey matter in the brain, and, as greyness indicates richness in nerve-cells, the two most important masses of nerve-cells. In addition to the thalami, other great nuclei are found in the fore-brain, nuclei that are associated with the life of movement and sensation. But it is the thalamus that interests us most, for it is this structure that is concerned with the origin and expression of the emotions. By means of the nerve-fibres travelling from this nucleus to the central cortex, emotional tone is imparted to thoughts that would otherwise be colourless. It will be remembered also that in dealing with the pituitary and the sympathetic system generally, attention was called to the close

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

connection that existed between these structures and the thalamus, so that in this area of the fore-brain we have the meeting-ground of affective stimuli and the chemistry of the pituitary. The thalamus in the lower animals is considerably larger in relation to the cerebral hemispheres than it is in man, since the higher brain in man has taken on many of its functions. Another difference between the brains of animals and men is that in men many more fibres travel from the thalamus to the cortex of the cerebral hemispheres, so that man is more conscious of affective stimuli than are the lower animals.

For a description of the finer structure of the brain it would be impossible to improve on the picture drawn of it by Sir Walter Langdon Brown in his book, *Thus We Are Men*. In this description the fore-, mid- and hind-brain are regarded as piled one on top of the other, so that the cerebral hemisphere becomes the top floor, the fore and middle the first floor, and the hind-brain the ground floor. Sir Walter Langdon Brown likens the brain

to an office consisting of several storeys. The lowest part is concerned with vital functions; above this is the cerebellum, which is chiefly concerned with maintaining the balance of the body and regulating muscular movements. The story above this is concerned with the expression of the emotions. The floor above is the sorting department where all the messages received from below are dealt with and sent on to the appropriate departments above, where the directors sit, each in his allotted room. These are on the surface, or cortex, of the brain. Starting from behind and working forwards (that is to say, travelling over the surface of the cerebral hemispheres from back to front), we find first the departments concerned with vision, in the front portion of which visual memories are carefully and systematically stored for ready reference, like a card index. In front, and slightly below this, is the central hearing department, with similar stores of memories of sounds, including spoken words. Coming further forward, neatly arranged on one side of a deep fold in the surface, are the rows of offices for receiving the ordinary sensations sorted out from all parts of the body, and facing them on the other side, a corresponding row whence messages ordering or checking movements are sent out. At one end of this row is a special office, on

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

the left side only, for speech, but this cannot work without drawing on the word memories stored up behind. And then, in front of all in a spacious office sits the Head of the Firm — the thinking You, with all this complicated and elaborate machinery at your command, as you imagine, although you are really entirely dependent upon it.

This picture of the brain as a vast and complicated building, full of offices given over to different businesses and each fitted with its own telephone for the reception and dispatch of messages, and with its own card-index system for the storing of its memories, is an excellent one. The only point at which the analogy drawn between a successful business concern, and the brain, becomes doubtful, is when we tap at the door of the head of the firm whom we presume to be sitting in his spacious office, in the front part of the cerebral hemisphere. Will we actually find the director of all these manifold activities there? Does he indeed exist at all, this integrated 'You', that exercises full control over all the complicated machinery of the body and mind? Sir Walter himself appears to harbour some doubts about this, for he is careful to point out that the 'You' that imagines it has all this complicated and elaborate machinery at its command, may find in the end the situation is quite different. Perhaps the machinery controls this 'You', and the 'You' does not control the machinery. Here is a mighty question. Who is the 'You' that directs this machinery? Does he indeed exist at all? It is to this enigma that we shall attempt to find some sort of answer in the later chapters of this book. In the meantime we are only studying the machine, not the person, if such person exists, who controls the machine. The time for searching for the 'self' has not yet arrived.

The story of the discovery of the functions of the different areas of the cerebral cortex is one of the most interesting in physiology. Three methods are available for the mapping out of the brain in terms of function: the first, the careful investigation of structure; the second, animal experiments; and the third, the noting of the disabilities that result from damage or disease of different areas of the cerebral hemispheres. Of these, the last two are by far the most instructive. In the case of animal experiments, two courses may be adopted. The first is to damage a certain area of the brain and then to note what activity has

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

been destroyed; the second is to stimulate various parts of the surface of the brain electrically, and to observe the results. What has been done deliberately to an animal may happen as the result of a disease or accident to a man. The brain, like other organs of the body, may become the site of a growth. When this happens, the symptoms produced by the pressure of the growth on the brain are carefully catalogued, and subsequently, either during an operation, or after the death of the patient, the exact situation of the growth is noted. By such means, and after many years of patient research, the centres controlling many of our activities have been mapped out; such as the centre for voluntary movements of various parts of the body, the areas of the brain recording sensations, the region of the brain concerned with sight, smell, and hearing, the control centres for speech and writing, and of many other functions in addition.

While these investigations were being made, one important area of the brain remained without a label, the foremost part of the cerebral hemispheres. Neither animal experiment nor observation of human beings gave any clue to its activity. Why did this region refuse to give up its secret? Certainly it must have some function, but all the available methods of investigation had failed to reveal it long after other activities of the brain had been located. Help in revealing the role of this frontal area was derived from an interesting case, recorded as far back as 1848. The patient was a workman named Phineas P. Gage, who was seriously injured by a crowbar. This penetrated his left orbit and completely destroyed the left frontal lobe of his brain. The patient survived his injury for many years, but presented no disability other than a change in character and mentality. His judgment and reason had obviously been impaired by the accident and his temperament altered. After the accident his temper became fitful, so that he gave way to unprovoked outbursts of rage. So erratic did his moods become that he gave up a job as soon as he had started upon it, and finally, unable to settle anywhere, he spent his time wandering from place to place. Previously of good character, he was now obviously a dishonest man and a liar. Formerly careful in his speech, he now indulged in gross profanities. In a word, from being a decent, honest, steady and efficient workman, he had been

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

converted into a thoroughly disreputable character. Finally he died in 1860, twelve and half years after his accident.

Since this case was recorded several other reports of patients suffering from disease confined to this area have been carefully studied. All of them have strengthened the conviction that the foremost part of the cerebral hemisphere is concerned with those psychic activities that may be said to distinguish a man from an animal. One observer has formulated this difference in one way, and another in another. Penfield states that the function of the frontal lobes is concerned with 'apperception, memory, spatial orientation, the ability to carry on abstractions, such as mental arithmetic, the manifestation of initiative, and the preservation of mental alertness with the capacity for planned administration'. F. Tilney and H. A. Riley, in their recent textbook on the central nervous system, state that lesions of this area

cause a gradual distortion of the two concurrent streams in consciousness, *knowing* and *feeling*, so that the patient no longer attaches the proper feeling-tone to his recognitions . . . If asked how he feels, he replies that he never felt better in his life. Everything in his horizon undergoes a marked expansion. He believes he is the wealthiest, the most powerful and the most capable person living. He is unable to correct this misapprehension by introspection, or by reference to the objects round him. This disproportion of the normal concurrence in the affective and cognitive streams of consciousness seems to be due to disease in the frontal area. It may, however, be the case that the splitting off of these two elements from each other will result in extreme depression, and that elements in the environment which should normally produce no depressing effect cause sustained and profound depression.

Other changes that have been noted as the result of damage to this area are a disposition to unusual levity so that the patient persists in senseless joking or indulgence in pranks. Occasionally a patient complains of a sense of unreality, or of everything in his neighbourhood having become very small, as though it were being viewed through the wrong end of a telescope. Changes in temperament and personality

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

are, however, the signs that are *par excellence* the characteristics of lesions of the silent area.

An examination of the minute structure of this part of the brain explains the ability of a patient to correlate thought and emotion. Thought must be activated by feeling before any bodily reaction occurs, for a thought uncoloured by emotion provokes no response. In order that this blending may take place, impulses from the cognitive sense areas of the brain are connected up with the frontal lobes by special fibres. To the same region run fibres from the thalamus, the structure that we have learnt to regard as the centre of the emotions. It is therefore in the frontal lobes that these two streams of consciousness, the cognitive and the emotional, blend and reach adjustment. In this area thoughts become coloured with feelings, and feeling in turn provokes action. A number of synthetic processes of this kind determine behaviour. Reason, judgment, imagination, fears, hopes and many other emotions all contribute their quota and from this conglomeration of impulses a pattern of action eventually emerges.

If the endocrine glands help to colour man's behaviour, it is in the fore-brain that the colours are utilized and the pattern is finally formed and fixed. Here all the different forces meet, and from here emerges the resultant behaviour pattern, a pattern determined not because some supreme director has planned it, but because an equilibrium in forces has been reached. The means by which this is achieved is vastly complicated. To blend the cognitive forces of vision, hearing, body, sensibility and smell with the primitive emotions of hunger and anger, and of sexual and parental feeling, would not be a very difficult business, and it can take place quite satisfactorily in the small frontal lobes of an animal. When, however, these cognitive and emotional elements have become a hundred times more complex, when thoughts have been expanded to the  $n$ th power, and when from the primitive emotions have been derived such abstruse sentiments as scorn, wonder, admiration and a number of equally fine feelings, the blending becomes an infinitely more complicated matter. Small wonder, therefore, that the well-developed fore-brain and the imposing brow are the distinguishing marks of a man.

Having examined the gross structure of the brain we can now turn

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

our attention to the elements of which the brain is composed, the nerve-cells. The cell population of the brain is enormous, and according to Judson Herrick, the number of cells living in the cerebral cortex of a man is somewhere in the neighbourhood of ten thousand million. This profusion of nerve-cells is the reason for the greater size of the higher types of brain, but even in the brain of a dog the cerebral hemispheres contain a greater number of cells than the whole of the rest of its central nervous system. In man the preponderance of nerve-cells situated in the brain is even greater and it is this fact that is believed to account for the pre-eminence of the human mind.

We have seen that the cell is characterized by its purposive activity, and that purpose may be taken as being synonymous with mind. Has the brain-cell more mind than a cell in a lower position, for example a leucocyte in the blood-stream? No answer can be given to this question for our only means of judging purpose in a cell is to watch its movements, and a brain-cell has no movements that can be observed. The brain-cell would appear to have given up its personal freedom for the sake of its higher calling and is securely anchored by all its branches. At one time it was supposed that one brain-cell had the power of disconnecting itself from another by withdrawing its tendrils. This withdrawal was regarded as being the means of producing a temporary block in the path of a nerve current, and was supposed to take place automatically in sleep. But the withdrawal of the branches of brain-cells has never been observed and this theory has been abandoned.

Except for this immobility, which the brain-cell shares with many others in the body, there is no special characteristic that distinguishes it from its fellows. It is markedly granular in appearance, but then so are many other cells in the body. One feature of the brain-cell is that it is specially sensitive to changes in its environment. Loss of consciousness may follow a slight reduction in the pressure of its oxygen supply. Shortage of oxygen has long been known to impair mental activity. Professor Barcroft reports that in the high Andes he had a marked disaptitude for arithmetic. Sugar is also an urgent requirement of the brain, since, unlike many other organs, it has no facilities for storing it. Sugar is indeed a vital food to the brain-cell

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

and prolonged shortage first impairs mental activity and then produces unconsciousness. Many narcotics act by diminishing the power of the brain to oxydize sugar, thus causing sleep.

The insistent demands made by the brain-cells for oxygen and sugar are a sign of the high pressure at which they live. The activity of the chemical changes in a cell may be regarded as a measure of their intensity of living. Judged by this standard the brain-cell is far 'more alive than a cell forming a part of connective tissue.

It is, however, by electrical means that the activity of brain-cells can best be measured. A nerve impulse, in other words the process by means of which nerve-cells communicate with each other, is in its essence an electrical phenomenon. By suitable means nerve impulses of less than a thousandth of a thousandth of a volt can be recorded as they pass over any spot in the central nervous system. But in addition to conducting an impulse, the brain-cell initiates it. It is also continually engaged in maintaining the efficiency and repair of the axis-cylinder along which the impulse travels, so that it is not only the operator in the telephone exchange, but also the engineer who maintains the efficiency of the wires. When therefore the brain-cell is said to be at rest, in the sense that nerve impulses are not being initiated, or are not travelling along it, the expression 'at rest' is only relative. At rest or not, the brain-cell is continually on duty. It is no wonder that it requires so much nourishment.

The electrical disturbances passing over the surface of the brain can be recorded and two kinds of changes in potential are made manifest, a fall followed by a rise. Since in this situation the neural processes can only be of two kinds, activation and arrest of activation, these changes of opposed electrical signs fit into the physiological picture. We are also able to pick up rhythmical electrical waves from the brain of a human being by placing two pad electrodes over the skull. The chief seat of this rhythm is the occipital or visual area of the brain, and it is found that the electrical waves coming from this area can be altered by mental activity. If a light be flashed in the eye of the subject of the experiment, a whole series of waves is picked up by the recording instrument from the visual area of the brain.

Although brain-cells are extremely sensitive to stimuli, they are not

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

sensitive to all stimuli. The writer of this book has had his forefinger two inches deep in a fellow-creature's brain without his patient being aware of the liberty he had taken. Yet the patient was fully conscious of everything else that was happening. Aristotle was probably aware of the fact that the exposed human brain is insensitive to touch when he made the heart rather than the brain the organ of the mind. But because the brain does not respond to touch, it does not mean that it is insensitive to appropriate stimuli. A wireless set answers to its switch but it is not likely to respond to a blow.

There is nothing, therefore, that is essentially distinctive in the brain-cell. It is even possible that a cell from elsewhere in the body might be trained for such a high destiny. In an embryo frog, the cells that are eventually to form the brain can be replaced by those from the skin of the back. So far as we can judge from the adult frog's behaviour, the cells that have been diverted from their natural destiny fulfil their new function faithfully. It should also be noted that many of the cells in the spinal cord that transmit the involuntary impulses of locomotion are indistinguishable from their more highly placed fellows in the grey matter of the brain cortex.

Physiology has therefore advanced so far as to be able, by means of its electrical instruments, to watch the brain at work and to take the brain to pieces and examine it under the microscope. We have been admitted into the telephone exchange and allowed to examine its switches. But this examination has not given us the answer for which we have been searching. What we really want to meet is the subscriber who makes use of the telephone. It is the mind and not the brain that we are after, and here our collaborators, the physiologist, the chemist and the electrical experts, fail us. They are like the engineering staff of the post office that is only concerned with the switches, wires and other paraphernalia of the telephone system. They have nothing to do with the subscribers; for that we must go to another department.

Thoughts, feelings, aspirations, despairs and all the varied manifestations of the psyche, lie outside the realm of natural science. Whilst science is prepared to study, and at one time was even prepared to explain away life, on physico-chemical principles, she refuses

## THE BRAIN AND CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM

to advance into the realm of the soul. Thus far and no farther, is her reply when we press her to go forward.

Mind presents itself as thoughts and feelings [said Sir Charles Sherrington in his Gifford lectures], and they are the outcome of the brain. The brain is matter and energy. Matter and energy can only be matter and energy. Therefore thoughts, feelings, and so on, are matter and energy. Therefore the mind is matter and energy? . . . The reply by the followers of Natural Science to-day, as I surmise it, would be: Thoughts, feelings and so on are not amenable to the energy (matter) concept. They lie outside it. Therefore they lie outside Natural Science. If, as you say, thoughts are an outcome of the brain, we, as students, using the energy-concept, know nothing of it; and as followers of Natural Science, we know nothing of any relation between thoughts and the brain, except as a gross correlation in time and space.

With this answer from the lips of a leader in the world of science we must for the time being rest content

## CHAPTER VI

### MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

THE last three chapters have been devoted to the study of the physical basis of thought and feeling. Physiology has left us in doubt as to whether there exists in the fore-part of the brain a general manager or as to whether our life consists only of a series of predetermined actions set in motion by the impact of sensory impressions on the central nervous system. Such a result was inevitable. The engineer who sets out to investigate the body will interpret it in terms of mechanism as certainly as the chemist will interpret it in terms of chemistry, and in this preliminary examination of the physical basis of behaviour and personality we have taken the body to pieces and viewed the pieces with the eye of an engineer.

There is another reason why scientists show a natural tendency to interpret human behaviour in terms of mechanism. This is because physics has advanced so rapidly that it has come to be regarded as the standard and basic science. We tend, therefore, to assess degrees of 'reality' in our thinking, according to its conformity or not with the laws derived from our study of physics. 'Make me a model of it, and then I will be prepared to accept it', is not only the demand of the Kelvins of this world but also of ordinary men and women. But in using the laws of physics as a measuring rod of 'reality', we are attempting the impossible task of explaining the higher in terms of the lower, the animate in terms of the inanimate. This dilemma in which we find ourselves would have been avoided had biology, rather than physics, been accepted as the basic science, and the laws that we had derived from the study of the living been taken as the criteria by means of which we gauge the 'reality' of our thinking.

But it is natural that the study of physics should have gained this pre-eminent position in the intellectual life of man. Man has established his ascendancy in the world through his success as a maker of tools. From the earliest ages he has been preoccupied with the

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

nature of the material world outside him, and for an entirely practical reason. He has chiefly been concerned how best he could convert to his use the various substances and natural forces that lay around him. In the process of answering this question he has stumbled upon the laws of physics and chemistry, and having tested their validity by the practical results that he derived from them, he has accepted them as proven and real. It is not surprising therefore that during the nineteenth century, when science was piling up its conquests over the material world, physics should have established itself as the basic science, and that the laws which the physicist enunciated should have appeared to have a special validity.

Medicine is a handmaiden of science, and as this book is written by a medical man it approaches its subject from a scientific angle. Nineteenth-century medicine was entirely materialistic and viewed disease in terms only of broken mechanism. The doctor looked upon his patient as a collection of organs, one of which had gone wrong. The idea that disease might be psychic in origin, and that in addition to possessing organs, a patient also possessed a soul, had not yet found any place in medical thinking, and even those practitioners who recognized the existence of such troubles as hysteria sought an explanation for them in terms of diseased organs. A woman was hysterical not on account of some mental conflict but because her womb was misplaced.

Fortunately the modern doctor is becoming far less mechanistic in his interpretation of disease than were his predecessors. A new and fuller meaning has been given to the old dictum 'Mens sana in corpore sano'. Not only is a healthy body necessary for the possession of a sane mind, but a sane mind for the possession of a healthy body. The 'psyche' of his patient can no longer be neglected by the physician. However materialistic he himself may happen to be in his outlook on life he is driven to take a broader view of his patient's condition, and to consider his psychological as well as his physical state. The old distinction between the hysterical and the real in disease has broken down and the physician, willy-nilly, is being forced into a new role, that of being his patient's father confessor, as well as the prescriber of physical remedies. Hence the increasing importance of psychology

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

in the medical curriculum, and the necessity for the doctor himself to find some philosophy of living that may furnish a basis for the advice that he gives to his patient

As not infrequently happens, it was the charlatan and the not altogether reputable member of the profession that were the earliest pioneers in this new movement in medicine. As an example of the first-named class of practitioners may be mentioned Mesmer, and of the second, Charcot. Mesmer was a Viennese doctor who was interested in astrology, a system of knowledge that asserts that the stars exert an influence on living beings on the earth. Mesmer identified this influence with electricity, and finally with magnetism. Meeting by chance a priest in Switzerland who had the local reputation of effecting cures by the laying on of hands, he began to treat patients himself by magnetic passes. He held that an occult force permeated the universe and that it could be pressed into the service of healing. In 1778 he removed to Paris in order to practise there his new form of treatment, and within a short while that city was thrown into a state of wild excitement by the marvellous cures that he effected. Mesmerism became a vogue, and Mesmer a magician. His consulting rooms were dimly lighted and hung with mirrors; strains of soft music rose and then fell away into silence, and when the company was assembled the great Mesmer himself, dressed in astrological robes, glided through the company, making magnetic passes. Nervous ladies became hysterical or fainted, and even the men showed signs of agitation. The fact that the French Government offered Mesmer 20,000 francs for the disclosure of his secret, and eventually appointed a special commission of physicians and members of the Academy of Sciences to investigate the phenomena that occurred in his consulting rooms, is a proof that some genuine results were obtained from his treatment. The commission that had been appointed drew up an elaborate report admitting many of the facts but contesting Mesmer's theory that his cures were the result of animal magnetism. Finally, Mesmer, after having made many converts, fell into disrepute, and retired to Switzerland, to die there a few years later.

But Mesmer was not merely a charlatan eager only to exploit to the full the neurotic women and the broken-down roués who attended

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

his séances. He was convinced of the truth of his teaching and used all the theatrical paraphernalia of his luxurious rooms in Paris for the purpose of producing the emotional atmosphere requisite for the working of his cures. A highly emotional state in his patients was as necessary for the success of his treatment as it is for the miraculous cures of Lourdes, or of any other form of spiritual healing.

One of the followers of Mesmer was a certain Phineas Quimby, who started healing patients by means of animal magnetism, but later on found that he could obtain the same results without any laying-on of hands. All he had to do was to sit beside his patient, look into her eyes and get her to tell him all her troubles and thoughts; in other words practise an elementary type of analysis. After having listened for several years to patients narrating their troubles, he developed a metaphysical system. He taught that there was no evil in the world and that it existed solely in the mind. Since illness was due to evil thoughts it could be cured by expelling them from the mind. Good thoughts must be substituted for evil. This teaching formed the basis of 'New Thought' movements, and later of Christian Science.

Mrs Mary Baker Glover Patterson Eddy suffered from many neurotic symptoms, some of them the result of an unhappy marriage. She became one of Quimby's patients. A psycho-analyst would undoubtedly have found much to interest him in the study of her subconscious, but none being available at that time, she was forced to have recourse to Quimby. Her trust in him was justified, for she completely recovered, thus clearly showing that her troubles were psychic in origin. After studying Quimby's methods, she wandered, in somewhat straitened circumstances, through America, teaching what she called at first, the Quimby Science. By 1875 she had succeeded in gathering around her a small group of disciples, and in the same year she published her book, *Science and Health*. From this small beginning started a movement that has swept across America and is now firmly established in Europe as well as in the country of its origin, the Christian Science Movement.

After firmly establishing her church Mrs Eddy disclaimed all connection with Quimby's teaching, so that the fact that she had previously had any dealings with him is now disputed by many of

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

her adherents. But there is no need for any controversy on the subject of the copyright of Christian Science ideas, for neither Quimby nor Mrs. Eddy was the initiator of such teaching. These ideas have existed in the minds of men from the most distant ages. The principle underlying the treatment advocated by Mrs. Eddy is merely an application of the old metaphysical conception that as matter is known only through the senses it has no existence other than in the mind. Mrs. Eddy discovered nothing new, she merely served up old ideas in a form suitable for a modern audience.

Mrs. Eddy was not a philosopher and her book is that of an ill-educated and muddle-headed woman, but the movement she started has resulted in more good than harm. The bad in Christian Science has been well advertised, especially by medical writers, the good is often overlooked. Fear, anxiety and preoccupation with the morbid, the unpleasant, and the ugly things in life are at the root of much unhappiness and ill-health. Christian Science puts emphasis on that which is positive, on courage, confidence, goodness and health, refusing to concern itself with evil, disease and death. It supplies also some sort of philosophy of life to those who have failed to find in orthodox religion the satisfaction of their spiritual needs. Medical experience has always shown that the less men or women are anxious about matters of health, the less likely they are to become ill, and that if they do fall ill the more likely they are to recover. If one looks at the faces of passers-by in the street, one is almost certain to find that the predominant expression is one of concern and anxiety. Nor is this the result of the war. Modern civilized man is habitually concerned with what he shall eat, what he shall drink and wherewithal he shall be clothed. Chronic anxiety is another name for continuous fear, and this, we have seen, has a definite action on the body. The fact that a man does not necessarily run away, or fight, when his sympathetic system and adrenals are stimulated, makes no difference. Nor is an imaginary danger, that exists only in the mind, a less potent cause of trouble than a danger that actually exists. Both have the same action on the body. A teaching, therefore, that inculcates a belief in the existence of a beneficent purpose running through creation and in the victory of good over evil cannot fail—even although the

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

optimism it inspires may sometimes be misplaced – to confer benefits on those who follow it.

But it is to Freud rather than to Mesmer or Quimby that the medical profession is chiefly indebted for pointing out the importance of the mind and for the establishment of psycho-therapy as a branch of medical treatment. Born in 1856 of poor Moravian Jewish parents, he qualified at the Medical School of Vienna. Before starting practice he spent a year in Paris, where he met Charcot and his, by then, still more renowned pupil, Janet. Freud was deeply impressed by their methods of treating nervous disorders by means of hypnotism, and on returning to Vienna he made up his mind to devote his life to the study of nervous diseases. At this juncture he fell in with Breuer, another nerve specialist, who described to him the interesting case of a woman who suffered from paralytic symptoms and a speech difficulty of a functional nature. When encouraged to talk about her trouble under hypnosis she traced it back to a time of emotional stress with her father, to whom she had been deeply devoted. What was of particular interest was that after having recalled to memory the origin of her trouble her symptoms had disappeared. Freud and Breuer, profiting by this experience, decided to treat patients by means of questioning under hypnosis.

But Freud did not long remain satisfied with the method that he and Breuer had devised, the cures often proving only temporary. He therefore began experimenting with a new method of reaching the 'unconscious' of his patients. By getting them to lie relaxed on a couch he encouraged a dreamy state in which they gave free utterance to every passing thought. Each idea was allowed to call up of itself the next associated idea until slowly the patient had retraced his past life back to the beginning of his trouble. By recalling to consciousness the circumstances, and the conflicts associated with the origin of his difficulties, a complete cure of the patient's symptoms was often effected.

From these beginnings was evolved the technique of the analysis that forms so important a part of modern psycho-therapy, the technique of free association. The patient is told to let his thoughts and feelings go as they will, without attempting to direct them

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

and without selecting or repressing them. When consciousness abandons the helm, the unconscious takes it over, and the thoughts and feelings that present themselves are those connected with its own special preoccupations, sometimes partly known to the person undergoing analysis, and sometimes completely unknown, or in any case, not recognized as being the real motive behind his apparently random ideas. Nor is the task of getting at these submerged stresses so hopeless as it might seem, for the repressed impulses are on the analyst's side and are continually trying to push through into consciousness. At last, the patient makes contact with this vital part of his unconscious, and what he is trying to hide, or to express by his illness, emerges. The explanation of his illness destroys its utility, and sometimes removes it. But this is not always the case because an intellectual recognition is not necessarily synonymous with a full emotional realization. Such in broad outline is the technique of psycho-analysis.

As the result of his empirical work on patients, Freud eventually arrived at several generalizations. The chief of these concerned the unconscious mind, repression, and transference. Freud asserted that in our ordinary waking life, ideas and impulses originate in the unconscious where they are experienced as emotions and not formulated in words. Many of these unconscious ideas are repressed, that is to say, prevented from becoming conscious. In order to explain the repression he postulated the existence of a restraining force, which he termed the 'endopsychic censor'. This censor only allowed to pass over the threshold of the pre-conscious into the daylight of consciousness those ideas of which it approved, driving back into the dark anything that was in conflict with the patient's view of what was desirable or fitting. These ideas when repressed into the unconscious carried with them their own quota of energy or life force, and this, having no natural outlet, expressed itself in the form of neurotic or hysterical symptoms.

Freud soon came to the conclusion that the energy, or life force, that he had postulated was sexual in origin, and gave to it the name 'libido'. Later on, and possibly influenced by the storm of protest that his views aroused, he widened his definition so as to include within it all enthusiasm and likings, as well as sexuality. But to his

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

way of thinking the sexual impulse still remained the most potent of all the basic energies of which the libido was composed.

Freud's investigations led him to believe that a patient's failure to remember some past incident in his life, and the difficulty that he often encountered in narrating events associated with it, were due to the action of this defence mechanism. Such thoughts were too painful to the patient and were therefore ejected from his consciousness. Only when this mechanism was overcome and the painful incident revived and reviewed in the light of later experience could the stresses and strains in the unconscious be removed.

The analytical idea of transference has frequently been misunderstood and has often been regarded as synonymous with the patient's falling in love with the analyst. Actually, as often as not, transference is expressed in terms of anger, hatred or resentment, the patient transferring to his doctor some of the old forgotten emotional feelings he entertained for the parents, nurse, brothers and sisters that surrounded him in his youth. Transference may be described as being the power of attaching to the analyst the unsatisfied emotion left over from some previous, and perhaps very early, experience.

It must be remembered that Freud was essentially an empiricist. He was working on sick human beings and his first concern was to cure them. Analysis was a form of treatment, and his theories, merely working hypotheses that he and his followers found to be useful. But as time went on, what was merely a method of treatment grew into something like a system of psychology. The old enigma concerning the nature of the self obtruded itself, and Freud felt constrained to furnish an answer to it. He elaborated therefore the cumbersome doctrine of the Ego, Super-ego, and the Id. It will be unnecessary to give a full description of what he meant by these terms, for it is not by any of these theories that Freud will be remembered. It is for having stressed the importance of conflicts in producing neurotic symptoms and for having initiated a method of relieving them that he will be regarded as a pioneer in medical psychology. Freud himself defined the ego as 'a coherent organization of mental processes' and the Id as an unknown and unconscious basis on whose surface the Ego rests. The Super-ego was a kind of moral standard to which the

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

patient subscribed. According to Freud the problem before the 'Ego' was to win freedom from both the 'Id' and the 'Super-ego'. This could be done by the Ego (the reasonable, conscious and discriminating self) extending further and further into the unconscious fields of the Id and the Super-ego. But Freud himself recognized the weakness of this part of his work for he referred to it as follows:

these ideas are not the basis of the science upon which everything rests; that, on the contrary, is observation alone. They (the Id and the Super-ego) are not the foundation stone, but the coping of the whole structure and they can be replaced and discarded without damaging it.

Amongst Freud's earliest pupils was Alfred Adler, like him, a Jew, but unlike him, a keen socialist, a man who saw man always as a member of a community. Adler was a student of Nietzsche and Schopenhauer and held that it was not sexuality but the 'will to power' that was the main driving force in man. It was not surprising therefore that as Freud continued to give exclusive importance to sexuality, and Adler to the desire for power, a widening rift should have opened up between master and pupil.

Adler maintained that every human being suffers from some sense of inferiority, and that in order to overcome this he consciously, or unconsciously, devises some scheme of action, which Adler termed his 'style of life'. Any inferiority, or faulty bodily development, acts as a spur to persistent effort to overcome this defect and its consequence, and to emulate those whom the child regards as superiors, or all-powerful. When the attainment of this goal is frustrated by the actualities of life, or because the goal is impossible, a neurosis is produced, the disabilities of which are made use of as a means 'for continuing the struggle for power'. The man or woman who has become ill, in this way finds a justification for withdrawal from life, and may even use the illness itself as an instrument for domination and aggression in the household. Hence the tyranny that is often exerted over a home by a querulous invalid.

The aim of analysis according to Adler was to discover the patient's particular 'style of living', and having found it to induce him to establish another that was of greater service to the community. After

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

working with Freud for several years Adler found that the differences of opinion between them were too great. He therefore left his master and founded a new school of his own which he called the School of Individual Psychology.

Adler's place at Vienna was filled by a young Swiss doctor from Zurich, Carl Jung, a different type of man to both Freud and Adler. Primarily Jung was a teacher, and a teacher with a strong religious bias, not so much in the direction of orthodox Christianity as of Eastern religious writings. He felt that it was not enough to liberate a patient from the compulsions from which he was suffering and then leave him; it was also necessary to give him some help for his future guidance. In this he came into conflict with Freud, who considered that advice to a patient was an unwarrantable interference with his freedom. Moreover, Jung had as little liking for Freud's preoccupation with sexuality as had Adler, and regarded the 'libido' merely as a term for general vital energy. He even took a different view of the unconscious by asserting that it was a repository for racial memories, such as the memory that made a duckling take to the water as soon as it was hatched. According to Jung this racial memory played an important part in man's unconscious and was frequently reproduced in his dreams and fantasies in the guise of symbols.

Nor did Jung lay stress like Freud on the necessity of looking always for the cause of a neurosis in the past. He sought rather to find it in the present. The question he asked was, 'What is the essential task in the patient's life that he will not fulfil, and from which he recoils?' His treatment was directed towards enabling the patient to recover the submerged function of feeling and thought in order that some natural adaptation could be made. In the words of Dr. Karin Stephen in *Psycho-Analysis and Medicine*:

Freud's outlook may be compared to that of Adam before the Fall — the pursuit of pleasure in a paradise of desire, marred only by the interdict placed upon the fruit of the forbidden tree. Jung's outlook is that of Adam after the expulsion from the garden, confronted with the task of adaptation, if he would live.

For all of these pioneers of psycho-therapy the activities of life were linked up with purpose; for Freud, with an attainment of pleasure and

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

the avoidance of pain; for Adler, with the acquisition of power and superiority over one's fellows, and for Jung, with adaptation to life. It was not surprising that they parted company on the subject of the chief motive power behind action. What could be more natural than that the young Adler, filled with ideas of an ideal socialist state and finding himself an obscure Jew in the aristocratic capital of the Austrian monarchy, should reach the conclusions that are the basis of Adlerian psychology? It was equally natural that Jung, well read in sacred Eastern literature, should react against the materialistic views of his master. Each brought to Vienna his own personal luggage and each left it with that luggage intact but wrapped in the analytical language of Freud.

What was perhaps more surprising and regrettable was that men whose aim was to liberate others from the thralldom of passion and petty jealousy should themselves have fallen victims to the same evils. Or perhaps it would be juster to say that it was the disciples of the three leaders of different psychological schools who were overcome by that from which they were attempting to free their patients. 'Let a man beware of his disciples', said Wilfred Trotter, and there is much truth in the saying. It applies to the disciples of scientists as much as to those of spiritual leaders. Darwin and Freud have suffered much at the hands of their followers. The paralysing hand of dogma soon descended upon the analytical fraternity with all its attendant phenomena, the search for heresies, the expulsion of recalcitrant and lukewarm adherents and the final excommunication of the apostate. There was only one god, the subconscious, and Freud was its prophet.

Side by side with these new medical schools of psychology there arose another which had its origin in the physiology departments of medicine, rather than in its consulting rooms. This was known as the Behaviourist school led by Dr J. B. Watson. Its protagonists were frankly sceptical of the speculations of the clinicians, and disliked their terminology even more than their methods. They felt that it would be more scientific if the psychologist were to make his observations in a laboratory, and under conditions that could be defined and repeated, or varied, at will. This new school of experimental psychology approached the problem of human nature from the standpoint of the physiologist.

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

Its exponents assumed that the psychic life was entirely dependent on the central nervous system, all mental events being but an emanation from chemico-physical processes in the brain. Since in their opinion mental life only existed as a function of the brain and had no causal efficacy, the fittest place for its investigation was in the laboratory of the physiologist.

Pledged to be strictly scientific (the model science being physics) the members of this school set two principal aims before them: the first to find mental units comparable to the atoms of the physicists, and the second to explain life in terms of mechanics. A most serviceable unit was available in the form of the reflex action. It was not surprising therefore that this was selected as a starting-point. Physiologists had fully established the importance of reflex action in the working of the body, and since nervous tissue everywhere consisted of a tangled network of protoplasmic filaments it was safe to assume that the structure underlying a reflex movement was a path of low resistance through this tangle. When the sole of the foot is tickled the excitation process spreads along the nervous system until it reaches the muscle group and brings it into action.

What made the reflex arc a still more profitable unit for a really scientific system of psychology was the fact that Pavlov, the great Russian physiologist, had shown that new reflexes could be created or conditioned. Pavlov utilized for his investigations the reflex regulating the flow of saliva into a dog's mouth. The natural stimulus to this flow is the taking of food. Later on, because the sight of food had always been followed by the taking of it into the mouth, the mere sight of it was found to be sufficient. The secretion of saliva produced by the stimulus of sight was called a conditioned reflex, and that caused by its actual presence in the mouth a natural one. Pavlov found that he could condition a new reflex secretion by the use of some entirely artificial stimulus such as the ticking of a metronome at a certain rate. If the food were presented to the dog immediately after the beating of the metronome, in time the sound of the metronome alone was sufficient to start the secretion of saliva. Pavlov's next step was to show that a negative as well as a positive reflex could be created. In his first experiment he had set the metronome beating at the rate of 100 per minute

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

immediately before the meal was presented and also while the dog was eating it, and after a series of such experiments (usually about 125) the positive reflex had been established. He now arranged that the metronome should beat at the rate of 50 per minute and that the meal should be taken away. This new experiment was repeated a large number of times. At first the dog did not appear to distinguish between the metronome beating at 50 and at 100 per minute, but gradually with the repeated withdrawal of food at the lower rate, the secretion of saliva began to fall when it was set at 50. In the end two conditioned reflexes were established, a positive produced by the metronome set at 100 beats, and a negative produced by the metronome set at 50. Finally Pavlov set the metronome between the two speeds at 75 per minute. This produced confusion, the nervous system of the dog partly exciting and partly suppressing the secretion of saliva. The dog was kept oscillating between the two tendencies, went off his food and sleep, and finally became neurasthenic. He is said to have been cured by taking bromide.

Another experiment of the Russian physiologist suggested that acquired reflexes could be transmitted from one generation to another. By ringing a bell shortly before mice were fed, the mice could be conditioned to secrete gastric juice at the sound of the bell. This new reflex was only obtained after the experiment had been repeated a great number of times. The mice were then allowed to breed and the new generation treated in the same way. They learnt to respond to the bell much sooner than had their parents. The experiment was repeated on the next generation with a still greater shortening of the period before the bell reflex was established.

Pavlov did not confine his experiments to animals but repeated them with suitable modifications on children. A young child was laid on its back with a rubber bulb under his chin so arranged that every time he opened his mouth the movement was communicated to a manometer. By a suitable contrivance chocolates could be liberated so that they fell into the child's mouth. Pavlov found that the child could be taught to open his mouth to a neutral stimulus provided that the stimulus had previously been associated with the dropping of a chocolate. What was felt to be of greater importance was the fact that the child could be conditioned far more rapidly than an animal.

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

With this work as a background, the new 'scientific' school of behaviourist psychologists carried out their own strictly controlled experiments. As an example may be quoted Dr. J. B. Watson's fear conditioning experiments on an eleven months baby known as Albert B. Watson found that fear response to white rats could be produced in Albert by means of loud noises. Previously he had enjoyed playing with them and had never shown any nervousness. There was no doubt, however, about his natural fear response when a heavy steel bar was struck in his immediate neighbourhood. In Dr. Watson's words, on the first occasion,

there was an intake of the breath and an upward fling of the arms. On the second stimulation the lips began to pucker and tremble, on the third he broke into a crying fit, turned to one side and began to crawl away as rapidly as possible with head averted.

The stage having been set for a scientific experiment, the friendly white rat was introduced in the usual manner into Albert's room, and just as he was reaching out to touch it 'the bar was struck immediately behind his head. The infant jumped violently and fell forward, burying his face in the mattress. He did not cry, however'.

After Albert had recovered, the experiment was repeated. This time the infant 'began to whimper. In order not to disturb him too seriously no further tests were made for one week'. To cut a long story short, by means of a steel bar, a new fear reflex to white rats was soon established in Albert. To quote Dr. Watson again: 'The instant the rat was shown the baby began to cry. Almost instantly he turned sharply to the left, fell over, raised himself on all fours and began to crawl away so rapidly that he was caught with difficulty before he reached the edge of the table.'

Not only was Albert now terrified of white rats but of rabbits, dogs and anything of a furry nature, of a sealskin coat, cotton-wool and even of Dr. Watson's head. The conditioned fear for the rats was therefore transferred to many other objects.

With the reflex as its fundamental unit, the Behaviourists have built up a school of psychology in which everything is explained by such means. Reflexes of a lower order are conceived to have been shaped

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

mainly by heredity, and those of a higher order by environment. An instinct, according to this view, is a 'hereditary pattern reaction, the separate elements of which are movements principally of unstriped muscle'. This conception of instinct was formerly held by William James, who wrote:

The actions we call instinctive all conform to the general reflex type; they are called forth by determinate sensory stimuli in contact with the animate body or at a distance in his environment.

Not only are the more obviously automatic reactions explained by such means, but also all forms of psychic activity. According to the Behaviourists all mental growth and all education is accompanied by the linking together of more and more reflex arcs, and by a greater and greater elaboration of an already vastly complicated network of neurones.

Although it is true that the linking together of numerous reflex arcs would furnish a reasonable physical basis for some types of thinking, it is impossible to regard it as an explanation of all forms of psychic activity. In the thinking known as 'associative', one idea or even one word automatically calls up another, and it can easily be assumed that the sequence of these ideas is determined by the links existing between contiguous reflex arcs in the brain, the excitation travelling from one to another. But associative thought is not the only psychic activity of which man is capable. Thought may be on different levels; it may be purely automatic, as in the initial excitation stage of an anaesthetic, it may be associative and determined only by similarity of words or phrases, or it may demand all the attention and the concentration of which a man is capable. All of these types of thinking are within a man's power. But even although most of his mental activity is of a kind that can easily be accepted as automatic and therefore explicable along behaviourist lines, all cannot be so explained. Occasionally, in the creative work of the artist, in the greatest efforts of the mathematicians, philosophers and scientists, and in the flashes of direct perception of the mystic and the saint, we have clear instances of psychic activity on a higher level that are beyond the capacity of the behaviourist to explain.

The idea of different levels of thought is far more prominent in Eastern than in Western systems of psychology. It is stated clearly by

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

Patanjali, who divides mental activities and states of consciousness into five categories: clear thinking, confused thinking, fancies, sleep and memory. Because the mind, the instrument of thought, is usually caught up and controlled by the external world (*prakriti*) it is rarely capable of clear thinking. Only when it is detached from this and controlled by the spirit (*purusha*) can it reveal truth. This idea is formulated in the 24th Sutra of Patanjali's fourth book: 'Though the mind has its automatic reactions, directed thinking is the result of its association with purusha.' It again appears in the 10th and 12th Sutras: 'The law of cause and effect is inherent in mind and is co-existent with mind. The yogi who has gained liberation, (*Kaivalya*), is no longer in bondage to mental limitations and is able to transcend the law.'

What explanation would the behaviourist offer of these higher levels of thought? He would offer none, for the simple reason that he denies their existence. The behaviourist entirely ignores the subject of consciousness and holds the view that because states of consciousness 'are not objectively verifiable, for that reason they can never become data for science'.

Professor William Brown writes as follows of this attitude of the behaviourist to the higher psychic faculties of man:

The mistakes made by Pavlov, and by the Behaviourists generally, are in what they deny rather than in what they affirm. What they affirm is very important so far as it goes. There certainly are such things as conditioned reflexes. No one can read Pavlov's work without being convinced of that. It is through the activity of the cerebral cortex that conditioned reflexes are built up and become active. The cortex of the brain (as distinct from subcortical levels) seems to be the physical basis for the production of positive and negative conditioned reflexes. These conditioned reflexes are of the utmost importance to psychologists as well as to physiologists. Every psychologist should welcome whatever help he can get from Pavlov and his followers. Where the psychologist would disagree would be in the denial that the psychological aspect as such has any importance for science. It is as important for science as it is for philosophy.

When we examine these four medical schools of psychology we find

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

that although they are marked by many differences, they possess two features in common, the emphasis they put on mechanism, and their disregard of what may be called the spiritual side of man's nature. If we accept the validity of the technique of analysis we at the same time tacitly accept a large measure of psychological determinism. We assume that the apparently disconnected and rambling thoughts of our patients are not really disconnected and rambling at all, but obey some general law, even although we may not have discovered that law. However disjointed these thoughts and feelings appear on the surface, they are the results of definite happenings in the unconscious part of the brain. If we knew the causes acting in the depths of the mind, we could foretell exactly how the patient would react. In other words he has no choice in what he says or what he does.

If the analytical schools tacitly admit a large degree of determinism in human behaviour, the behaviourist school vociferously proclaims it. It asserts that all conduct is based on reflexes, either congenital or acquired; the human being is a pure automaton. There is no need to look for a managing director living in a spacious office in the front of the brain, for the director would be useless when life is nothing but a series of reflexes.

The second feature that is common to these four schools of thought (with the possible exception of Jung's teaching) is the denial of the existence of any higher part of man's nature. By no method of living, by no effort, or training, can a man ever become anything other than he is. Philosophies and religions that proclaim that he is capable of rising above the level on which he habitually lives, of developing faculties that are lying latent in him, and of thus becoming something more than a pleasure or power driven machine, are to these schools of psychology without meaning. Freud admitted that personally he was not interested in religion. His work was to free men from their fears and inhibitions and thus enable them to meet the problems that life presented to them. He had no message for his patients and offered them nothing better than a restoration of bodily and mental health. But it is difficult for any psychologist to ignore entirely such a common human characteristic as the religious sense, the urge that makes men reach out towards something higher than themselves. Many analysts, therefore, have been constrained to examine this fundamental urge and to explain it

## MEDICAL PSYCHOLOGY

away by regarding it as a method of escaping from a reality that has become too difficult, as a wish fantasy, or as a result of an infantile experience. God for the analyst is merely an adult form of the father that figured so largely in childhood, a father to be feared, or loved, as the case might be. The analyst apparently believes that by finding suitable analytical terms in which to describe religious sentiment he has disposed of the problem finally and satisfactorily. But although it is true that psychological difficulties, either in the past or the present, may colour a religious outlook and even disturb it, they can never explain it. In Sir Walter Langdon Brown's words, 'just as a person may have a slight delusion about a fact which can be cleared up under analysis, so the religious attitude may be purified by analysis, but it is not removed'. The analytical school therefore has really nothing to say concerning the higher potentialities of man or his spiritual longings. Like its founder, it is not interested in religion.

In spite of its deficiencies and whatever may be its limitation as a system of psychology, medicine owes a big debt to the Analytical School of Vienna. After all analysis is not a gospel but only an empirical technique. Its chief value has been to bring home to the profession the importance of the part played by the hidden workings of the mind in the causation of disease. The names of Freud, Jung and Adler will be remembered by medical men long after they have disappeared from textbooks of psychology and philosophy. They were good therapists but only poor philosophers.

## CHAPTER VII

### DIFFERENT PATHS TO TRUTH

THE medical schools of psychology of the twentieth century deliberately sought to dissociate the study of mind from philosophy and religion. J. B. Watson, in the introductory chapter in his book, *Psychology from the Standpoint of a Behaviourist*, writes as follows:

Psychology up to very recent times has been held so rigidly under the dominance of traditional religion and of philosophy — the two great bulwarks of mediaevalism — that it has never been able to free itself and become a natural science. Chemistry and physics have freed themselves. Zoology and physiology are now in process of becoming emancipated.

He then gives it as his opinion that just as astronomy had to bury astrology, neurology phrenology, and chemistry alchemy, so must psychology get rid of its 'medicine men' and make a new start.

Whatever scientific value there is in the colossal number of volumes written in terms of consciousness, it can be better defined and expressed when the psychological problems which give rise to them are solved by genuine objective methods. States of consciousness provide no objective data that admit of scientific examination, nor can the behaviourist find any evidence for 'mental existence' or mental processes of any kind.

Modern medical psychology, therefore, refuses to concern itself with anything that falls outside a clearly defined framework. It is determined to be strictly scientific. The nature of its findings is thus a foregone conclusion and can be summed up in the two words, strict determinism. This is the conclusion to which we seem to be driven after our examination of the part played in the formation of character by the endocrine glands, of the structure of the central nervous system and after our consideration of the Freudian and Behaviourist schools of psychology. All three of these methods of investigation point to man being an automaton, incapable of choice and irresponsible for all his

## DIFFERENT PATHS TO TRUTH

acts. It would be foolish to look for a self, unless a machine can be said to be possessed of a self. Indeed, it may be said that not only these, but all of the more obvious arguments in the great freewill-determinism controversy, are on the side of the determinist, and that the scientist, *qua* scientist, is bound to regard man as a complicated piece of mechanism. If we examine the nature of scientific methods we see why this weighing of the scales in favour of determinism is inevitable.

Science works on the assumption that every event must have a determining cause, an uncaused event being unthinkable. Acts of will are events and being predetermined by some cause or other cannot possibly be free. The whole of the universe according to the view of the scientist works in the manner of a gigantic machine, and man being part of the universe, he, also, is a mechanism. If he were to be an exception to this rule, we should have two categories of events in the universe, the vast majority predetermined by mechanism, and the remaining few resulting from the operation of man's will. Such an idea is intolerable to the scientist whose whole method of investigation rests on the basis of tracing a relationship between causes and effects. There is no place for 'will' within the frame which he has set up for his investigations.

In order that a scientist may discover the relationship between a cause and its effect, he must take to pieces the object with which he is dealing so as to examine its component parts. Each separate part, the known and the unknown, is scrutinized separately, and from the relationship that is found to exist between the unknown and the known parts new light is thrown on the mechanism. Science cannot but proceed in this way, and the results that it has obtained from this method of investigation have amply justified its use. Nevertheless, two assumptions have been made by the scientist: the first the assumption that effects can always be calculated from causes, and the second that an object is analysable without remainder into its parts and is capable of classification in terms of these. Another way of putting this is to say that the nature of the whole can be discovered from an examination of its parts, an idea that is vigorously denied by a large number of philosophers. According to the 'holism' of Smuts and other philosophers, the whole is more than the sum of its parts; something new emerges

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

from the whole that is not revealed in the examination of the separate parts.

A striking example of the fallacies that result from the scientific method of examining an object is summed up in B. A. Howard's prescription for a man, quoted and commented on by C. E. M. Joad in his *Guide to the Philosophy of Morals and Politics*:

To make a man take the following:

Enough water to fill a ten-gallon barrel,  
enough fat for seven bars of soap;  
carbon for 9,000 lead pencils;  
phosphorus for 2,200 match-heads;  
iron for one medium-sized nail;  
lime enough to whitewash a chicken coop, and  
small quantities of magnesium and sulphur.

Take these ingredients, combine them in the right proportions, in the right way, and the result, apparently, is a man. This, at least is one of the things that a man is. There is, in other words, a scientific formula for the production of men, as there is for the production of any other commodity. And, if it be objected that the formula applies only to the body, and that the mind has been left out of the recipe, we have only, as we have seen above, to go to the biologists and geneticists for information as to genus, species, race, initial inheritance, and distribution of chromosomes and genes, and to the psychologists for a statement of inherited disposition, temperament, mental structure and unconscious complexes, and the mind and character can be brought within the bounds of the formula . . . So treated a man inevitably appears to be determined. His constitution is determined by its constituent parts just because, *from this point of view*, it is the sum of its constituent parts, and his present is conditioned by his past antecedents just because when *he is so regarded*, it is the outcome of his antecedents.

A jury of scientists therefore is bound to bring in a verdict of 'not responsible' when man is put into the dock and tried for what he has done. No other verdict is possible to those who have taken their oath on the bible of Science.

And this method of taking a thing to pieces and examining each

## DIFFERENT PATHS TO TRUTH

part separately is the only one possible to science. To deny the applicability of the method or the validity of its results is to deny the competence of science to deal adequately with the study of man, and this to a great many scientists is anathema. It is anathema, apparently, to Dr. J. B. Watson. Hence his desire to free science from the trammels of Philosophy and Religion and to exclude from his consideration such entities as states of consciousness which disappear when the man is taken to pieces, and thus upset calculations.

But the nature of man can never be discovered by ruling out all methods of investigation that do not conform to scientific standards. The scientific approach has undoubtedly given magnificent results, and, as we have seen, endocrinology, the investigation of the anatomy and physiology of the central nervous system, and the contributions of the various schools of medical and behaviourist psychology have all given us valuable information. Each kind of investigator has examined man within a certain framework, the limitations of which are clearly reflected in his findings. Man is this, and Man is that, but he is something more, and for the discovery of the 'more' the help of other methods of research are necessary. Philosophy and Religion can both make their contributions, and it would be as rational for us to decide that we can examine satisfactorily the contents of a room by looking through a keyhole as to conclude that we can best describe man by excluding all philosophical and religious accounts of him. P. D. Ouspensky in *A New Model of the Universe* writes as follows:

People of our time possess four ways that lead to the Unknown, four forms of conception of the world — religion, philosophy, science and art. These ways diverged long ago. And the very fact of their divergence shows their remoteness from the source of their origin, that is, from esotericism. In ancient Egypt, in Greece, in India, there were periods when the four ways constituted one whole. If we apply the principle of Avva Dorotheos, which I quoted in *Tertium Organum* (page 286), to the general examination of religion, philosophy, science and art, we shall see clearly why our forms of conception of the world cannot serve as a way to truth. They are for ever being broken up, for ever being divided, and they for ever contradict both themselves and each other.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Obviously, the more they are broken up and separated from one another, the farther they depart from truth. Truth is at the centre, where the four ways converge. Consequently the nearer they are to one another, the nearer they are to truth, the farther they are from one another, the farther from truth. Moreover, the division of each of these ways within itself, that is to say, the sub-division into systems, schools, churches and doctrines, denotes great remoteness from the truth, and we see in fact that the number of divisions, far from diminishing, increases in every domain and every sphere of human activity. This in its turn may show us, provided we are able to perceive it, that the general trend of human activity leads, not to truth, but in the very opposite direction.

It is noteworthy that it is never the great scientist, but always the second- or third-rate scientist who regards the scientific as being the only path to truth. Great learning inevitably brings great humility. As the circle of light broadens in which the seeker after knowledge stands, so does the encircling darkness appear greater. What is known, compared with that which remains unknown, seems infinitesimal. Why should anyone, who is so conscious of how little he can see, proclaim that he alone is fitted to show the way to his fellows? He does not proclaim it, but on the contrary, welcomes his fellow-pilgrims, those who follow a different path. Max Planck, who is perhaps the most eminent of all living scientists, writes:

There can never be any real opposition between religion and science; for the one is the complement of the other. Every serious and reflective person realizes, I think, that the religious element in his nature must be recognized and cultivated if all the powers of the human soul are to act together in perfect balance and harmony. And, indeed, it was not by any accident that the greatest thinkers of all ages were also deeply religious souls, even though they made no public show of their religious feeling. It is from the co-operation of the understanding with the will that the finest fruit of philosophy has arisen, namely, the ethical fruit. Science enhances the moral values of life, because it furthers a love of truth and reverence — love of truth displaying itself in the constant endeavour to arrive at a more exact knowledge of the world of mind and matter around us, and reverence, because every ad-

## DIFFERENT PATHS TO TRUTH

vance in knowledge brings us face to face with the mystery of our own being.

But science, philosophy and religion have not always seemed divergent paths to truth. Nor did there always exist any feeling of antagonism between them, the scientist maintaining one point of view and the religious man another. Nor was it necessary for the religious man to deny the validity of the scientist's findings, or else, as has been the tendency lately, to act on the defensive and attempt to drag his own experiences into line with those of the scientist. Not only in Ancient Egypt, Greece and India was science closely linked with religion, but also in Medieval Europe at the time of the Moorish occupation. It was to the Moorish centres of culture, then established in Southern Europe, that we owe the beginnings of the experimental method that has proved so successful in Science. Roger Bacon never wearied of declaring that familiarity with Arabic and Arabic Science was for his contemporaries the only way to true knowledge, and Arabic culture at that time was closely linked with religion. Buffault, in his *Making of Humanity*, goes so far as to declare that:

Science is the most momentous contribution of Arab civilization to the modern world. Not until long after Moorish culture had sunk back into darkness did the giant it had given birth to rise to its might. It was not science only which brought Europe back to life. Other and manifold influences from the civilization of Islam communicated the first glow to European life.

And the civilization of Islam was a civilization that was founded on religion, a religion that opened the doors of its universities to all who might care to enter.

Christians, Jews and Mohammedans spoke the same tongue, sang the same songs, participated in the same studies. All the barriers which separated the various people were effaced, all worked with one accord in the work of a common civilization. The mosques of Cordova, where the students could be counted by thousands, became the active centres of philosophical and scientific studies. (RENAN)

What really Dr. Watson should demand is that psychology be freed from the restricting bonds imposed on it by formalized and institution-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

alized religion; the 'religion' that imprisoned and tortured Galileo in order to force him to deny his discoveries and which still issues its 'ukases' when scientific findings are not to its liking. With such a demand all seekers after truth, religious as well as scientific, will be in agreement. The dead hand of dead religion has always lain heavy on scientific discovery, and the sooner such encumbrances are removed the better it will be for humanity. Not only will science gain from this burial of religious corpses, but religion itself. The ground is encumbered with dead creeds, the outer shells, rituals and observances from which the inner life has long departed. They make a mockery of true religion and had best be hidden underground.

But religion is something else than the creeds and dogmas that in the end grow up and choke it

It is the vision of something which stands beyond, behind and within the passing flux of immediate things; something which is a remote possibility, and yet the greatest of present facts; something that gives meaning to all that passes and yet eludes apprehension; something whose possession is the final good, and yet is beyond all reach; something which is the ultimate ideal, and the hopeless quest. (WHITEHEAD.)

Because our task is so exceedingly difficult, let us enlist the help of all branches of knowledge in our search for an understanding of the nature of man. To the question, 'What is man?' modern science gives the answer, he is an automaton, every action of which is predetermined by his mechanism. There is truth in the answer, yet it does not embody the whole truth. It will therefore be necessary to turn to the philosophers and the men of religion and to hear also what they have to say on the subject.

It may be advisable at this point to forestall a criticism. It will be felt by some readers that in the chapters that are to follow, I have given undue prominence to Eastern systems of philosophy, at the expense of those of Western origin. I make no apology for this. At a very early period of history the paths of the East and the West diverged. Whereas the attention of the Western thinker was turned mainly to the world outside himself, that of the Eastern thinker looked more at the world within; whereas the Westerner sought adjustment by altering

## DIFFERENT PATHS TO TRUTH

that which lay without him, the Oriental sought salvation by altering that which was within. The result of this different orientation of attention is obvious. Each thinker has reaped his reward: Western man, all the achievements of science; Eastern man, the greatest systems of philosophy and religion that the world has ever known. It is the greatest possible error to suppose that because the Eastern sage's standard of living and system of sanitation is below that of a British or American working man, he must be regarded as backward in every other respect. If the West has brought to the East all the achievements of her science, the East possesses riches from which the Westerner can gain equal profit should he wish to do so. It is not by accident that all great religious geniuses have arisen in the East.

There are many who share this view, so many that an embarrassing wealth of quotations from a great variety of writers on the subject presents itself. I select only two. The first is from Schopenhauer:

From every sentence [of the Upanishads of Vedānta] deep original and sublime thoughts arise . . . In the whole world there is no study so beneficial and so elevating as that of the Upanishads. It has been the solace of my life — it will be the solace of my death. They are products of the highest wisdom . . . The Vedānta is destined sooner or later to become the faith of the people.

The second quotation is taken from a lecture delivered by Max Muller at Cambridge:

If I were asked under what sky the human mind has mostly developed some of its choicest gifts, has most deeply pondered on the greatest problems of life, and has found solutions of some of them which will deserve the attention even of those who have studied Plato and Kant — I should point to India. And if I were to ask myself from what literature we, here in Europe, we who have been nurtured almost exclusively on the thought of Greeks and Romans, and of one Semitic race, the Jewish, may draw that corrective which is most wanted in order to make our inner life more perfect, more comprehensive, more universal, in fact, more truly human — a life not for this life only, but a transfigured and eternal life — again I should point to India.

Britain has brought the great discoveries of Western civilization to

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

India and India has gained materially from them. But in encouraging her to shed many of her social and historical habits there has been exhibited a tendency on the part of the reformers, both European and Indian, to forget that in her ancient inheritance were gifts of inestimable value, not only to India herself, but to the Western world. Fortunately, although India is being slowly modernized and many of her sons who have been educated along Western lines have broken with their own cultural past, there are signs of a revival of interest in her own philosophies and religions. Such movements as the Brahmo-Samaj, the Arya-Samaj, and the spiritual renaissance inaugurated by Ramakrishna, all point to a realization on the part of many of her leaders that 'Man shall not live by bread alone'. If this need for spiritual values was obvious at the end of the last century when these movements started, it is still more apparent now.

Formerly Eastern literature was closed to all Westerners except to the few who had a knowledge of Sanskrit. Now, however, there exist translations of all the more important oriental books so that Westerners have at their disposal the thoughts and discussions of some of the greatest minds in the world's history. What is of particular importance is the fact that these minds have directed their attention to just those problems, such as the nature of man, that Europeans have neglected. Alexis Carrel in his book *Man the Unknown* points to the fact that Western Science has been too much preoccupied with matter, and must now turn its attention to the still more important questions of life and living. He looks to a future in which man will make discoveries about himself that will be as important as those he has made in physics, discoveries that will enable him at the last hour, and just before it is too late 'to become master of his destiny'. According to Alexis Carrel the key that will unlock the door to man's true progress has yet to be forged in some vast Rockefeller laboratory for the study of mankind. May it not have already been forged and be lying somewhere lost, neglected and covered with dust? The search that Alexis Carrel would now initiate in the West has been followed in the East for thousands of years. It may not be necessary to build in New York an Institute of Man.

But before dealing with Eastern philosophy it will be advisable to

## DIFFERENT PATHS TO TRUTH

see what light is thrown on man's nature by Western philosophy. The subject is an immense one, and it would be beyond the scope of this book even to provide a summary of the more important systems of Western philosophy. But fortunately this is not necessary. Instead of dealing primarily with philosophy we shall continue as before to discuss man's nature from the point of view of science, breaking off occasionally to note what philosophy has to say on the subject. Science works by drawing inferences directly from observations, but there is a point beyond which it will not venture. It is at this point that we must enlist the aid of philosophy if we are to attempt to overstep the limits that science has set for itself.

## CHAPTER VIII

### CONSCIOUSNESS

PHYSIOLOGISTS generally suppose that consciousness is related to only a very small part of the human organism, the brain. According to the majority of scientists even the brain is not wholly conscious, but only that part of it, the cerebral cortex, in which sensory impressions are registered, and from which voluntary impulses to the muscles depart. Sir Henry Head and other researchers have, however, brought forward evidence in support of the view that the subcortical, as well as the cortical, region of the brain may be conscious. In this area lie the great masses of brain cells and fibres — and more especially cells — that were of so much interest in the study of the emotions, the region of the thalamus

As will be seen later, this conception of consciousness presents many difficulties. According to it conscious life is a series of disjointed impressions imprinted on different areas of the cerebral cortex. For example, 'I' become conscious of the light reflected from the box of cigarettes on my desk through the messages conveyed via the eye to the occipital region of my cerebral cortex. 'I' realize that 'I' would like to smoke. 'I' send a message to a series of muscles by means of which I take up a cigarette. 'I' remember that 'I' have already smoked more than 'I' meant to. 'I' replace the cigarette. Here is a series of 'I's', each representing a separate moment of consciousness provoked by stimulation of my cerebral cortex. Nevertheless, although this description of life as a continual shifting of the focus of consciousness from one object to another, is partly true, there appears to exist something that combines these separate impressions into a whole. If this were not so, a symphony played by an orchestra would be a series of disjointed notes, the picture being painted by an artist, separate dabs of colour placed on a canvas. Fortunately, by means of some other faculty we are able to feel the symphony, and the artist to see the picture not as an aggregate, but as a whole, that is to say, as something which is brought

## CONSCIOUSNESS

into existence by the coming together of its parts, so as to form a new and complete entity over and above the sum of its parts. Psychic life, therefore, cannot be entirely explained by a flicker of consciousness travelling over the surface of the brain and lighting up now this area, now that, in the way that some physiologists have supposed. This physiological view of consciousness explains something, but not everything

Logical thought is apt to deal only in extremes. We state that something is either this or that; if it be not this, then it must be that. If the brain only is conscious, then all else is unconscious, as though the phenomenal world were clearly marked out in pure colours without any gradations in between. Although the brain may be distinguished by the intensity of its consciousness, there is no reason to suppose that all other structures are entirely unconscious. Indeed a certain modicum of consciousness may be assigned to every living cell. What distinguishes living from inert matter is its purposefulness, and, as we have seen in considering the cell, it is impossible to study non-living matter without considering purpose, it is impossible to study biology without using teleological arguments.

Intelligence is innate in all living tissue. Where lies the intelligence that converts the separate notes of a symphony into a beautiful and meaningful whole? Where lies the intelligent force that shapes the body to its own ends? As a surgeon, I am sometimes called upon to cut away the ureter (the narrow channel that connects the bladder with the kidney) and to implant it into another part of the bladder. When my work has been completed, I am ashamed of its crudity. Compared with the job done by a plumber, my joint is a poor and botched concern. Yet when I examine it a year after I am scarcely able to tell which is Nature's joint and which is my own. Some intelligence in the patient's body has made good my failure, paring off redundant tissue here, adding new tissue there, until perfection has been attained. Does that intelligence exist only in the brain? No, for if I divide all the nerves that reach that spot from the brain, the work is performed just as well. If we concede intelligence to the body, we must also concede to it some degree of consciousness.

P. D. Ouspensky in speaking of Hatha Yoga states that yogis believe

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

that the life of the body consists of thousands of separate lives, and that these lives presuppose the existence of a 'soul', or a consciousness. His own study of dreams confirmed this view. He believes that not only does the head think, but also the limbs and the visceral organs. This thinking of the body does not reach our consciousness in a waking state because the head consciousness dominates everything else.

'But when the head consciousness calms down and becomes clouded in the state of sleep, especially in the deeper forms of sleep, immediately other consciousnesses begin to speak, namely those of feet, hands, fingers, stomach, those of other organs, of various groups of muscles. These separate consciousnesses in us possess their own conceptions of many things and phenomena, for which we sometimes have also head-conceptions and sometimes have not. This is precisely what most prevents us understanding our dreams. In sleep the mental images which belong to the legs, arms, nose, tips of the fingers, to the various groups of motor muscles, become mixed with our ordinary verbal visual images

Many thinkers in the past have gone further and have believed that the whole of Nature, animate and inanimate alike, is alive and intelligent. Fechner is strongly of the same opinion. According to him, original sin in scientific thinking is that it regards the spiritual in nature, not as the rule, but as the exception. Instead of believing one life to be fed at the breasts of a greater life, one individuality to be sustained by a greater individuality, which must necessarily possess more consciousness than that of all that it brings forth, we habitually treat what lies outside ourselves as inert and without intelligence. Or, if we do believe in some Divine Spirit, we look upon it as bodiless, and Nature as without a soul. Fechner has therefore returned to the animism of the Greeks. Not only do the trees and the forests have souls, but also the earth on which we live. The earth has a consciousness to which we, as individuals walking on her surface, stand in the relation of sense organs. She absorbs our perceptions into her larger sphere of knowledge, and combines them with the other data that she possesses.

It will be said that Fechner, in his book *Zenda-vesta*, speaks as a poet, rather than as a scientist, and that this being so, his view need not be taken too seriously. But a poet is as well entitled as a scientist to tell the

## CONSCIOUSNESS

story by which he explains the universe. Science possesses no monopoly of truth. In this region she is practically impotent. Science, we have been told, is measurement, and what means of measurement has she in the realm of consciousness? Perhaps the poet, equipped with intuition, is in this region able to see more than the scientist. So before examining scientific and philosophical views on consciousness, it will be of interest to include Fechner's account of how he arrived at his own inspired view of Earth-consciousness

On a certain morning I went out to walk. The fields were green, the birds sang, the dew glistened, the smoke was rising, here and there a man appeared, a light as of transfiguration lay on all things. It was only a little bit of earth; it was only one moment of her existence, and yet as my look embraced her, more and more it seemed to me not only so beautiful an idea, but so true and clear a fact, that she is an angel — an angel carrying me along with her to Heaven . . . I asked myself how the opinion of men could ever have so spun themselves away from life, so far as to deem the earth only a dry clod . . . But such an experience as this passes as fantasy. The earth is a globular body, and what more she may be, one finds in mineralogical cabinets.

This idea that nature is animate, which under the name of Panpsychism, is an element in many philosophies, was clearly recognized by Wordsworth.

With bliss ineffable  
I felt the sentiment of Being spread  
O'er all that moves and all that seemeth still.

But we must turn from the poets to the study of man. We have three entities to consider: consciousness, thought and the brain.

How is the body related to the mind? This has remained one of the central problems of European philosophy from the days of Plato and Aristotle onwards. Three main theories have been advanced in explanation, each of them capable of many variations. It will be necessary to summarize these three general theories as briefly as possible.

The first is the theory of psycho-physical materialism. According to this view, the physical changes in the brain are themselves the cause of

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

consciousness. Psycho-physical materialism was particularly popular during the last century before matter had crumbled in the scientist's hands and when he could still hope to explain the whole universe in terms of machinery. Hobbes (1588-1679) taught this extreme form of materialism. Impressed by the mechanistic explanations that Galileo and Descartes had applied to physical phenomena he stated that matter and motion were the sole ultimate realities. They accounted for everything and even for human knowledge since all knowledge was derived from sensations, and sensations were produced by the impact of matter on sense organs. Sensations and thoughts alike, according to this view, were only certain kinds of motion.

The mental life according to this idea was a by-product of chemical activity, consciousness being pictured as a sort of glow that travelled over and lit up different areas on the surface of the brain. Being only a result of physico-chemical changes thought was entirely dependent on the brain and could initiate nothing of itself. The mistake which the materialists made was an elementary one, namely, that of assuming that because consciousness is *associated* with certain physico-chemical disturbances in the brain, it is *caused* by those physico-chemical disturbances. They did not stop to reflect that the movement of matter can only produce movement of matter, or else be converted into potential energy. Even if by means of a technique at present beyond our powers we could express the changes that occur in the brain of a man listening to a musical symphony by means of chemical formulae, these formulae would throw no light on the nature of his thoughts, or tell us why he found beauty and enjoyment in the symphony. Moreover, since according to this theory there can be no such thing as mental activity *per se*, all speculation ceases to be of any value, including speculation on the subject of mind and matter. Materialism, like the theory of behaviourism, ends in a *reductio ad absurdum* if thought be merely cerebral chemistry, and the theory of behaviourism a conditioned reflex, neither materialism nor behaviourism need be considered seriously. Like the scorpion, who is reputed to sting himself to death when surrounded by a ring of fire, both theories commit hara-kiri.

Epiphenomenalism is a recent offshoot from materialism. This theory asserts that although some mental events are the reflection of brain

## CONSCIOUSNESS

changes and are strictly determined, it does not necessarily follow that all mental events are of this nature. It is just possible that once the registration of brain changes has taken place, other mental events may be generated without physico-chemical accompaniments. The mind, in other words, after it has been called into activity by the brain, may have some sort of life of its own. Consequently, many epiphenomenalists would concede that some events in the universe may be caused quite differently from those which are determined by movements of matter. Epiphenomenalism, therefore, has provided a loophole of escape from the difficulties produced by materialism.

It is obvious, however, that the strongholds of pure materialism are in any case crumbling not through the direct assaults of idealists, but because the material out of which they have been built shows signs of disintegration. The science of physics, which, as we have seen, has been taken as a model by all other sciences, has proved untrustworthy. Formerly, matter was matter and force was force, and no one doubted the antithesis between the two principles out of which the universe was constructed. But now that the search into their nature has grown fierce enough, matter and energy are continually changing into each other. Energy in the cosmos turns into precipitate mass, function in living beings materializes into precipitate structure. The old conception, therefore, of matter as an inert mass through which energy manifested itself, and of brain being structure which formed, as a by-product, the emanation of consciousness, is badly in need of modification.

The second theory of the mind-brain relationship is provided by Idealism. Bishop Berkeley (1685-1753) is probably the best known of English Idealist philosophers. He formulated his philosophy in order to combat the materialist thought of his times, taking Locke's essays as his text. He maintained that our ideas and sensations not only of the primary, but of the secondary, qualities of matter cannot be 'copies' of anything objective, but are our own mental experiences. It is, therefore, superfluous to assume the existence of material bodies at all. Our ideas, and not material things beyond them, are the real objects of knowledge. 'All the choir of Heaven and furniture of Earth . . . have not any substance without the mind; . . . their *being* is to be perceived or known.' When not perceived 'they must either have no existence

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

at all or else subsist in the mind of some Eternal Spirit'. The only realities, according to Berkeley, are God, other spiritual beings created by Him and the various ideas and experiences which He has ordained to be apprehended according to a certain sequence. According to this, consciousness is the reality, and matter the shadow. The processes in the brain with which consciousness is linked up, are not something additional, but merely the way in which one consciousness appears to another, or perhaps to itself. You can never hope to see into my mind, but if you could invent a special microscope and open my skull, you might conceivably see movements of molecules, atoms and electrons taking place in my cerebral cortex. This does not mean that two processes are occurring — my consciousness, and the changes in my brain; all that it means is that to you the former appears as the latter. But as Professor William Brown points out, this philosophical conception does not really help us. It is a restatement of the psycho-physical problem rather than a solution of it.

Psycho-physical Interaction is the third and the oldest of the theories that attempt to explain the relationship of brain and mind. It was brought into prominence by Descartes (1596-1650). This philosopher began by doubting all that he could reasonably doubt in order to find a rock on which he could build his philosophy. Discarding all conceptions incapable of proof, he fell back on the famous dictum, 'I think, therefore I am' (*Cogito, ergo sum*). This, Descartes regarded as a conclusion that he could accept, all others being axiomatic. It bore, however, the implication that the mind knows its own processes (namely thinking) better than it knows the objects about which it thinks, and this led him to draw a very sharp line between what was 'mind' and what was 'not mind', thus separating mind from body.

According to Descartes' view, there are two entities: the mind, and the body. The brain is the organ of the mind and each interacts on the other; in active states the mind acts on the brain, and in passive, the brain on the mind. When a man wills to move his arm, he initiates certain physico-chemical changes in the motor area of his cerebral cortex, which travel down the nerves and lead to contraction of muscles. When light enters the eye, it initiates changes in the retina, changes that are conveyed along the optic nerves to the hind-part of the cerebral

## CONSCIOUSNESS

hemispheres. As the result of the agitation caused there, the mind becomes conscious of some object in the external world.

Although this explanation of the relationship between body and mind appeals to common sense, it causes great difficulties to the philosopher. How can two orders of existence that are so different make contact, so that one may react on the other? Innumerable philosophers have struggled unsuccessfully with this problem. Giving up in despair his attempts to answer this question Leibnitz fell back on a subterfuge; mind and brain did not interact, but kept time, like two perfectly synchronized clocks. How did they manage to keep such perfect time, the one with the other? Leibnitz replied that it was because they had been wound up and set going at exactly the same moment with the result that each tick in one synchronized with each tick in the other. Even Descartes was aware of the difficulty that he had created and had to fall back on the view that the perfect harmony which existed between mind and body was evidence, not of any causal relationship between the two, but of both having been created by God, and of having been set going together harmoniously tuned.

There is yet another difficulty in this theory due to the fact that according to the ordinary view of the nature of mind and matter, matter has extension in space, whereas mind has no extension. This difficulty, like the preceding one, is the result of our having so divided up the universe of mind and matter that the two can never meet.

But in spite of these philosophical difficulties, the common-sense arguments in favour of psycho-physical interaction are many. One is that the existence of mind as a separate entity explains the unity of consciousness. It is difficult to see how otherwise a series of separate disturbances widely distributed over the cerebral cortex and in different levels of the brain could ever be realized as a unity unless they meet at some point. This difficulty would be overcome if we could postulate their meeting in the unity of the mind.

It must be borne in mind, however, that the difficulty of explaining how the separate states of consciousness that make up our lives are unified, exists only for Western thinking. For many Oriental philosophers no explanation is necessary, since they believe that life consists only of a series of separate sense impressions, and changing states of

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

consciousness. In order that he may see that this is so the Buddhist disciple is recommended to seat himself in some isolated spot and to contemplate the procession of thoughts and images that pass through his mind, like a long unedited cinematograph film passing through a projector. By so doing he will realize that his life is but a succession of disjointed phenomena, and that he does not possess any co-ordinating and integrating 'I'. When a man says 'I' he is merely employing a useful term to describe an ever-changing combination of physical and psychical phenomena. Nor is the Buddhist alone in believing that there is no integrated and enduring 'I' within us. Hume (1711-76), after careful observations carried out on himself, repudiated Bishop Berkeley's assumption that a man intuitively apprehends his own self. He wrote: 'For my part when I enter most intimately into what I call *myself*, I always stumble on some particular perception or other . . . I never catch myself' Hume was an accurate observer, and he refused to be misled by an assumption merely because it was widely held. All that he could find in himself was a multitude of disconnected sensations and impressions, which, by habit, he had come to regard as causally connected events. As a result of self-observation he was convinced that previously by mistaking similar for identical impressions he had fallen into the error of regarding as enduring what was really transitory. Now all that he could be sure of was the existence of a flux of changing events. Hume was baffled by his inability to find an enduring self. Unwittingly he had joined the company of the Buddhists. To the followers of the Eightfold Path the difficulty of explaining how the disturbances widely distributed over the cerebral cortex are unified, would not exist. On the contrary, they would maintain that this is a true picture of reality. Buddha is reported to have said:

There are the petals, the pollen, the corolla and the stalk, but there is no lotus flower. There is this, or that passing idea, this or that transitory emotion, this or that image, but no organized whole behind them which can be called the ego, or the self.

The difficulty of explaining how brain and mind can interact has become so acute that interactionists have been forced to search for arguments to support their original thesis that somehow or other they

## CONSCIOUSNESS

*do* interact. In contesting the view of the materialists that consciousness is merely a by-product of the physico-chemical activity of the brain, the help of the biological argument of utility has been enlisted. The fact that consciousness has been evolved at all is, according to those who use this argument, an indication that it must be of some use to the organism, for Nature is an economical housewife and does not produce anything that has no purpose. But if it has a purpose, how can any purpose be achieved if it is prevented from acting on the organism? This argument may be of some assistance in supporting the view of interaction, but it does not give us any help in understanding how interaction is effected.

All these suggested answers to the problem of how the mind reacts on the body are unsatisfactory. This almost certainly means that the formulation of the question itself is unsatisfactory, and that our conception of the two entities, body and mind, is an error. Henri Bergson has re-examined the problem in a new way, starting with an attempt to find out what we really mean by matter, and what we mean by mind. Our knowledge of matter is based on perception. Instead of accepting the usual philosophical view that *we* endow the material universe with such properties as sound and colour, Bergson holds the view that the material universe actually possesses these qualities. The only difference between matter as we observe it, and matter as it really is, lies in the fact that we see only a part of it, not the whole of it. We make contact with the external world through our central nervous system. This is built up of sensory and motor fibres, which are given to us in order that we may react and adapt to our environment. We see an object such as an apple as it is, but only those characteristics of the apple to which we can react. It is green, and if I stretch out my hand and touch it, the apple feels hard. But these messages that pass through the tactile and visual nerves to the brain do not by their action on the brain produce consciousness of the apple. For actual perception of the apple at least a brief duration of time is necessary, for memory must come into play in order to summate a number of rapidly successive views of the object perceived in our consciousness. Memory, according to Bergson, is of the nature of spirit, whilst perception is physical. It is memory that produces the summation of momentary

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

impressions, and gives us a picture of an apple, acting in the capacity of the projector that summates the separate photographs in a film, so as to give them meaning. Thus the separate vibrations of light reflected from the apple are combined by memory, so as to give us the appearance of green. If the mind could be so slowed down that it could count the successive vibrations, it would see the apple, not as green, but only as a series of vibrations. Theoretically, pure perception is distinct from memory. 'Pure' memory is, however, unconscious, and what we call 'conscious' memory is memories on the way to perception. Our conscious life is, therefore, a result of the working together of perception and unconscious memories, which insert themselves into the series of motor reactions which serve for our perceptual activity.

Bergson's theory is based on the view that memory is spirit and that all our memories remain in our minds from the earliest times. They are, however, unconscious, but if the mechanism of the brain is excited, they are brought to the mind as conscious memories. According to him there is no such thing as a loss of memory. Even if the brain is damaged this can only result in a loss of the machinery that allows memories to actualize themselves; they are not destroyed, but in abeyance.

It is interesting to note how nearly Bergson approaches the Eastern view of intellect. To the Vedântist and the Buddhist the organ of ordinary thought is placed on the same level as the special sense organs. To the five sense organs of sight, hearing, taste, smell and touch, the Vedântist adds the sixth organ of the mind (*Manas*). They are all of the same nature and equally limited and liable to error. Whilst the senses are of great practical value in providing us with the means of appreciating and reacting to changes in our environment, they are quite incapable of apprehending reality. Bergson would say that determinism is the sort of view that the intellect alone must take of the nature of reality. This is so because of the intellect's habit of cutting up everything into little bits. When an individual personality is divided into bits so that his life appears to be merely a succession of states of consciousness which persist unchanged until they are replaced by another state, and when the intellect proceeds to reason

about each of these isolated snapshots, it must come to the conclusion that the one state is conditioned by the other. But the life of an individual is not in reality a sequence of unchanging states and actions. His life is a continuous and indivisible flow, just as all life is a continuous flow of the *élan vital*. It is of the very nature of life to be creative, and the individual (not in a cross-section of time but taken as a whole) is of necessity creative by virtue of the very fact that he is alive. If his life is creative, it is clear that it cannot be completely determined by what has gone before; for this would mean not the creation of anything that is new, but merely the expression of something that is old.

The ingenuity shown by different Western philosophers in trying to solve the riddles of mind and matter, life and death, free-will and determinism, must excite our admiration. These subjects have been approached from every direction, and every trick known to the intellect has been tried, in order to come nearer the solution of the enigma. All the time, the working of the instrument itself, the intellect, has been carefully scrutinized in order to make sure that it has infringed none of the principles of sound reasoning. Each philosopher has analysed the findings of the opposing school of thought in the hope of discovering there some slip in logic, and has substituted his own theory after having satisfied himself that it was incapable of refutation. The whole game has been played strictly according to the rules of logic. But unfortunately the rules of logic, themselves, are liable to change with time, and the logic employed by Aristotle would not be accepted by all the philosophers of to-day. Moreover, logical arguments show an unfortunate tendency to degenerate into a series of verbal exercises, ending in a pyrotechnic display of dialectics. Nothing is easier than that a discussion which began as a search for truth should end as an argument about words. Each philosopher attaches to a word a slightly different meaning, and Truth, like an elusive butterfly, slips out between the meshes with which the philosophers are trying to catch her. Which of the words that we use in our discussions represent ideas that are real, and which do not? And when, having defined our position, we have reached the final stage of our argument with that comforting assumption that a thing is either 'this' or 'that', who can say that

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

this is so? Let Chuang Tsu answer that question: 'Suppose I am arguing with you, and you get the better of me. Does the fact that I am not a match for you mean that you are really right and I am really wrong? Or if I get the better of you, does the fact that you are not a match for me mean that I am really right and you are really wrong? Must one of us of necessity be right and the other wrong, or may we not both be right and wrong?' Chuang Tsu had but little faith in dialectics.

The problem of the relationship between mind and body is really the same problem as the relationship between the body and its physico-chemical substratum. Because the Western scientist regards matter as real and physics as the basic science he has sought to explain biology in terms of physics, and psychology in terms of biology. This attempt to interpret the higher in terms of the lower was inevitably doomed to failure, for the relations of consciousness, living organism and matter are relations of increasing abstraction from reality. By starting from the more fundamental concept of consciousness the Eastern sage has avoided falling into these errors.

As will be seen in the following chapter another difference between the Eastern and Western schools of philosophy is that whereas the latter has complete faith in logical thought, the former has not. It is only in the Oriental school of philosophy that there exists clearly the idea of different levels of thought, of lower and higher mind. The importance of this idea is repeatedly emphasized in this book, and has been ably dealt with in the preface to the second edition of Ouspensky's *New Model of the Universe*.

The human mind can rise to a level almost inconceivable for us, and we can see the results of the work of higher mind, those most accessible to us, in the Gospels, and then in Eastern Scriptures: in the Upanishads, in the Mahabharata; in works of art, such as the Great Sphinx at Gizeh, and in other memorials, though they are few in literature and art. The true valuation of the meaning of these and similar memorials, and the realization of the difference between them and others which have been created by ordinary man, or even by a genius, needs experience, knowledge and a special training of the mind and perception and, perhaps, special faculties not possessed by everyone.

## CONSCIOUSNESS

The existence or non-existence of higher levels of thought cannot be proved. It may be experienced or even, if it be not experienced, some quality in the products of higher thought, such as in the literature referred to, may strike a man or woman as being of a kind that does not exist in ordinary literature. To those who have implicit faith in the intellect as a guide to truth, such an assertion as this will have little meaning. For those who feel otherwise it may have some significance.

Having seen how Western philosophers have attempted to solve the riddle of the interaction of mind and body, we will now turn our attention to the East. The first of the systems of philosophy to be examined will be the Indian Vedânta. But at this point our method of procedure must change. Instead of following science as far as it can take us and then attempting to extend our knowledge by means of philosophy we shall begin our journey again from the starting-point of Eastern philosophy. This change in technique is necessary if for no other reason than that the Vedânta is a complete self-contained and self-consistent system of knowledge, which, if it is to be rightly understood, must be studied as a whole. The Vedânta is not only a system of philosophy, but it is also a science, a religion and a treatise on psychology. It cannot be studied in parts

## CHAPTER IX

### THE VEDĀNTA

THE word *Veda* literally means superior knowledge. It is applied in India to certain extremely ancient books, considered to be direct revelations from God, books that embody truths that could not have been reached by any ordinary human mind. Hindu scholars state that humanity owes these works to the *rishis*, men who have attained higher levels of consciousness and have passed on the knowledge so gained to their fellows.

Vedic literature consists of four main divisions: the *Rig-Veda*, the *Yajur-Veda*, the *Sāma-Veda* and the *Atharva-Veda*, each of these being further subdivided into three portions, the first, the original text, the second, texts dealing with ritual, and the third, the Upanishads, dealing with philosophy. It is believed by scholars that the *Rig-Vedas* are the most ancient records of the religious sentiment of mankind, and quite apart from their intrinsic merit they are of immense historical interest.

It is with the *Upanishads* (the basis of Indian philosophy) that we are chiefly concerned. The word '*upanishad*' is derived from three Sanscrit words meaning 'sitting down near', and denotes the sitting down at the feet of a teacher. The *Upanishads* are also known collectively as the *Vedānta*, or literally, the 'End of the Vedas', either because they were attached to the end of the Vedas, or because they represent the conclusion arrived at by the Vedas.

The central theme of the Upanishads is 'the search for unity' in the midst of diversity.

What is that, by knowing which, everything in the universe is known? The answer is to be found in the conception of God, or Brahman, as the Ultimate Cause of the universe: Since the effect is not different from the cause, it is possible to know the universe by knowing Brahman, as by knowing one lump of clay, all that

## THE VEDĀNTA

is made of clay is also known; for the modification is but an effort of speech, a name, and the only reality is the clay. (SWAMI MADHAVANANDA.)

In addition to the original Vedānta we have many commentaries made on it by different philosophers, and in this chapter we shall deal principally with the commentaries made by the sage Samkara. It must be borne in mind that, from time immemorial, Indian thinkers have fully recognized the fact that every man differs in what he has the capacity to think about and perceive, and that the same truths can be given in a variety of ways, suited to different stages in intellectual development, and to different tastes and aptitudes. The Vedānta is an attempt to sum up the whole of human knowledge and it makes use of the whole of human experience; at one time, it is a religion, at another, a philosophy, and at another a science. Its aim is the solution of the mystery of existence. The Upanishads came from many different teachers and did not give an entirely consistent and coherent view of the universe. It was Samkara's aim to reduce the whole of the Upanishads to a single consistent system free of all contradictions. To him, the principle of non-contradiction (*abāda*) was the test of truth. That which is true does not contradict itself. Dreams are contradicted by waking experience, which in turn is contradicted by the direct apprehension of truth in higher states of consciousness. This is the highest knowledge available to man, and there is nothing that can contradict it. It is beyond logical proof, which applies only to the empirical world, and can be regarded as a working tool of the mind that is serviceable within a limited range of experience. Samkara, like Bergson, regarded the intellect as an instrument that has a limited and an eminently practical utility. It is like the police constable's bull's-eye lantern that concentrates illumination on one particular spot, so that we can take note of a particular object, which at that moment has a particular significance for us. For the practical purposes of living the intellect is an excellent contrivance, but as a means of revealing 'the whole' it is as useless as is the constable's bull's-eye lantern in revealing the world.

In dealing with any contradictions that seemed to exist in the Upanishads' view of the universe, Samkara generally steered between two extremes; for example he denied the Sūnyavada view that there

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

existed no permanent self, but only a series of impermanent mental states, and stated that the self was both known and unknown. We know that the self exists but we do not know what it is. Nor can we hope to know the self by means of thought, since thought is but a part of that flux of states belonging to the region of the non-self. The self can never be a creature of the natural world, for there would not be any natural world were not the principle of the self presupposed. Rather can we think of the self as

undifferentenced consciousness alone which is unaffected even when the body is reduced to ashes and the mind perishes. (RADHA-KRISHNAN )

This description of the true self in terms of consciousness, and the clear distinction Samkara draws between thought and consciousness, is of great interest. Western psychological systems as a whole fail to differentiate between thought and consciousness, and in identifying the true self with consciousness, the Vedântist philosophy is in harmony with knowledge gained in higher states. However much Eastern and Western thought may differ on lower levels, these differences entirely disappear on higher levels of consciousness. That this is so is clearly shown by a comparison of the Vedânta philosophy with the writings of Western mystics.

And because the seeker after the highest truth must be able to command perfect concentration, or 'one-pointedness of mind' (*ekapata*), the aid of *yoga* is enlisted as a means of discipline. *Yoga* (mind control) and *vichara* (inquiry) are complementary, each reinforcing and amplifying the other. The Eastern philosopher in his search for truth takes a different path from that followed by his Western colleague. Whilst the intellect is sufficient for ordinary purposes, the higher truths, he would say, can only be apprehended by him who prepares himself carefully for their reception. The philosopher must, therefore, polish the mirror within him, in order that its surface may be able to reflect the truth without distortion. Philosophy in the East is a religion to which a man dedicates his whole life, for knowledge is not only empirical but also spiritual, and for its apprehension much that a man has already learnt must be unlearned. Until he has been able to get rid of the *upâddhies*, or

## THE VEDĀNTA

finite categories in relationships that belong to what is conditioned, he will not be able to pass on to the higher branches of his study. 'Knowledge', says the *Bhagavat Gita*, 'is enveloped in nescience, and thereby mortals are deluded.'

But it is impossible to remove this veil of nescience all at once. The limitations imposed on the seeker after knowledge by the lower part of his nature can only be got rid of by a gradual course of development. Just as in the study of nature it is necessary to proceed step by step, beginning with experience and then rising gradually from sensations to the establishment of principles and the classifying of phenomena, so in the attainment of spiritual knowledge is it necessary to rise by slow degrees from the perception of what seem to be the accidental relationships of the finite to a grasp of the entire universe as a harmonious whole. The final step of all is, as the Advaita (non-dualistic) Vedānta would put it, to rise still higher and reach the stage of complete self-realization.

Pin your faith to natural knowledge, stumble through the darkness of the blind; pin your faith to supernatural knowledge, stumble through a darkness deeper still. Natural knowledge brings one result, supernatural knowledge another. We have heard it from the wise, who have clearly explained it. They that know and can distinguish between natural knowledge and supernatural knowledge, shall by the first, cross the perishable in safety; shall, by passing beyond the second, attain immortal life. (UPANI-  
SHADS.)

This does not mean that the Indian philosopher neglects pure reasoning in his attempt to arrive at the truth, it means that he believes that the intellect alone can only take him a certain distance, and that in order to go further, other faculties must be developed. He draws a clear distinction between that which is necessarily true for all possible intelligences, and that which is only contingently and relatively true for us and for people like us, but is not true for all possible intelligences. And in order that he himself may be able to attain this higher intelligence, he employs definite methods, such as those of *Rajah Yoga*.

The life of Samkara, the exponent of the Advaita system of the Vedānta, is an excellent illustration of the attitude of an Eastern philo-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

sopher to his vocation. This great thinker lived in the first quarter of the ninth century, when the Vedānta philosophy was already many hundreds of years old. He went to a Vedic school, where Govinda taught him the main principles of the Advaita system. As a young man he became a recluse, or *Saṅgyāsin*, wandering from village to village and discussing philosophy with the teachers of other systems. Later he achieved fame as an exponent of the Advaita philosophy, which he developed by a series of commentaries on the ancient texts. He also became a religious reformer, not preaching a single exclusive method of salvation, but doing his utmost to revive and purify the various forms of Hinduism with which he came in contact. Of the diversity of his gifts there can be no doubt; he was a philosopher and a poet, a savant and a saint, a religious reformer and an adept in yoga practices.

It is possible to present the chief doctrines expounded by the Vedānta under a series of headings. The arrangement of these headings has been taken from V J Kīrtikar's *Studies in Vedānta*.

1. There is only one Ultimate Reality, the *Brahman*, from which the Universe proceeds. It is self-existent and Alone, and not being originated is Eternal and Real. All else being the effect of causes is unreal. Before it was not, and when its form disappears, it will not be.

2. Brahman is All-Pervading. There is no object without Brahman, as its substratum; divorced from Brahman an object has no existence. No object has any independent existence. Its reality is only relative and phenomenal.

3. Whilst Brahman is Immanent, it is also Transcendent, that is to say, only a part of the Brahmic sphere is represented by the visible universe.

4. Brahman is all Intelligence and all Bliss. It is not the thinker but pure thought.

5. Though Brahman is One, it has also become many by its Own will; It is thus many when viewed from the standpoint of the universe.

6. The universe is born from Brahman, that is, brought into being by the Word (Logos, Thought and Will). It lives in Brahman and in the fullness of time is dissolved again into Brahman.

## THE VEDĀNTA

**Brahman is therefore that in which 'we live and move and have our being'.**

The following principles in Vedānta are enunciated differently by different exponents.

7. Some maintain that the universe is the product of a power called Mâyâ in its association with Brahman. Rigorous Monists, ignoring this intermediate agency, insist that Brahman Itself is the substantial and operative cause of the universe.

8. Monists, such as Shankar, state that individual souls are identical with Brahman; others like Ramanuja admit the individuality of souls.

9. Brahman is not the author of Good and Evil, which are of man's making and enter the world when he violates the higher laws of his being

10. Every embodied existence with its environment is the result of its own past — *Karma*. Karma cannot be avoided; it must be worked out to its end. The Vedānta, therefore, recognizes freedom of will by asserting that a man's happiness or misery entirely depends on his own actions, past and present. By good deeds he may even destroy evil effects which are to arise in the future, and thus accelerate progress towards the goal of perfection

There are two verses in the Upanishads that summarize this view of Karma and Rebirth:

✓ 'When the body grows weak through age or disease, the Self separates itself from the limbs, as a mango, a fig, a banyan fruit separates itself from the stalk; man hastens back to birth, goes as before from birth to birth. Whatever his conduct and character in one life, he has it in his next; if good in one, he is good in another; his good karma makes him good, his sinful karma makes him sinful. Hence they say that soul is full of desire. He wills according to his desire, he acts according to his will, he reaps what he sows.

11. Man's difficulties on earth are due to his ignorance, which encourages him to look upon his bodily existence as his real life. Because of this his actions are egoistic.

12. The Vedānta therefore lays down rules for the social, moral and spiritual development of man. Following these rules he may eventually surrender his lower self and become identified with a higher and spiritual self. The duties the Vedānta inculcates are not

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

only towards his fellows, but also towards every living creature, since they are all parts of the whole. These duties must be performed without attachment or hope of reward, either present or future.

13. The Karma that results from this method of living leads eventually to the purification of the heart and to the acquisition of higher powers that make it possible for a man to realize that the individual self is not merely related to Brahman, but is identical with It.

14. True salvation comes with complete realization of this identity of the higher Self with Brahman.

15. Until this higher state of spiritual perfection is attained, until the sense of 'I' and 'Thou' and 'Mine' and 'Thine' has completely disappeared, a man has no right to deny the reality of the universe. Until then he is bound to recognize the three-fold distinction of God, Man and Universe. For ordinary man the world is not illusory, nor is the relation in which he stands to it an illusion. It is only when the sense of the individual and personal 'ego' has become completely extinct and when the great truth *Tat-tvam-Asi* (That thou art) has been fully experienced that the true character of the Supreme Self and the identity of the individual self with that Self are realized. Then the illusory nature of the world as a self-subsisting entity is evident.

The Vedānta is both a philosophy and a religion, for to the Eastern there is no real division between the two. The apprehension of divine truth necessitates the living of it to the utmost of one's ability. That which is known theoretically only still remains unknown. Theory and practice are mutual adjuvants to full understanding. The Vedānta prescribes for the student certain rules of conduct that will eventually lead to his knowing and living a larger and larger self, to the utter extinction finally of his lower individual self. Brahman, the one Reality, is pure thought and being. Associated with its own power, *Mâyā*, Brahman modifies itself into all the individual existences of which the world consists; it is broken up, as it were, into a multiplicity of intellectual and sentient principles (*Jīvas*, or individual souls). What is real and eternal in each *Jīva* is only the universal Brahman, but the *Jīva* blindly identifies itself with the body and the sense organs, and

## THE VEDĀNTA

looks for its true self there. So long as it remains in this state, oblivious of its higher nature, it is bound to a succession of embodied existences. The round of births and deaths ceases only when the *Jīva* realizes fully its identity with Brahman.

The various philosophers who have made commentaries on the Vedānta have offered slightly different explanations of the derivation of the many in the universe from the One, and all accept these different texts as being necessary for people of different capacity. Samkara states that the explanations that he gives in his commentaries may be either true or only metaphorical. His personal opinion is that they are metaphorical, for only by the use of metaphor can spiritual truths be expressed.

The word *Māyā* is often misunderstood by readers of Eastern philosophy. It is generally taken simply to imply that which is illusory — not real. But Samkara himself has described it as

The power of the Lord from which the world springs. The divine power in which names and forms (that is, all finite existences) lie uninvolved, and which we assume to be the antecedent condition of that state of the world in which names and forms are evolved.

For all practical purposes the universe that has come into being through *Māyā* is real.

The problem that has exercised the minds of dualistic philosophers, the interaction of body and mind, does not cause any difficulty here. According to the Samkya philosophy, the concept *Prakṛiti* covers all that is mental as well as all that is physical. Mental and physical events are both abstractions if they are taken as entirely separate and distinct from each other, but they do not constitute two distinct entities but two co-operating wholes within one whole, the *Prakṛiti*. The relation between body and mind and between the body and its physico-chemical substratum is not one of interaction or parallelism, but of co-operation. Their operations within a single sphere are self-determining and at the same time other-determining. The duality between the physical and the physiological, and the physiological and the mental, and the mental and the conscious is only an apparent duality, for there is a continuity of process between each and the other.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

It is interesting to note that the Vedantic philosopher, like Descartes, starts from the existence of the self as being self-proven. There is no need for any external authority to define what is even more immediate to a man than is his body. Nor is any effort required for knowing this so-called self. It is needed only for removing the error of identifying the true self with that which the Vedānta asserts to be the not-self. In the early stages of his development a man views himself and the object world as self-subsisting and independent entities, marked off by sharp and clearly defined outlines. Every event appears to him to be the effect of some antecedent cause. All objects appear as occupying space, all events as occurring in time. This is an illusion due to the limitations of ordinary thinking. In a further stage of development he finds that these relations of cause and effect, space and time, are relations which his mind itself has created for its own purposes and that they are true only for mind. They are termed *phenomena*, or dependent realities, by Eastern and Western idealists alike.

It has been pointed out that the Vedānta is eminently practical, and does not condemn these views as illusory in the sense that they have no utility for everyday purposes. A man must live his life and discharge his obligations to his fellows and for such purposes these ideas are sufficient. 'All this universe', says Samkara, 'is for a man's edification and to help him to attain self realization.' But he must go further than these ideas if he is to reach his goal. There are two paths, *pravritti* and *nivritti*, the one leading to the external world and the other to self-knowledge; the one providing the worldly experience necessary for a useful life, the other leading to philosophical and spiritual enlightenment.

Death said: God made the senses turn outward, man therefore looks outward, not into himself. Now and again a daring soul, desiring immortality has looked back and found himself (UPANISHADS)

Only when in the later stages of development the path of *nivritti* is trodden, will the inconsistencies that his mind has made for him disappear. Then does a man cease to identify himself with the ever-changing products of Nature (*Prakriti*), and with the five sense organs (including the organ of ordinary thinking), which instead of being the true or divine sense are only its instruments. Only when he finally

## THE VEDĀNTA

knows that reality is the Supreme Self, or Brahman, and that the world has no independent existence apart from this, do the differentiations that his mind has made disappear. That is what the Vedāntist describes as 'The return into identity from difference'.

According to the Samkya philosophy, the creative force of Nature is made up of three *gunas*, or qualities.<sup>1</sup> When this creative force is lying dormant, these three principles or qualities are in equilibrium. When *Purusha* (spirit) acts on them, this equilibrium is disturbed, and from the disturbance arises all the diverse phenomena of Nature (*Prakriti*). The three principles, or *gunas*, are called respectively *Rajas*, *Tamas*, and *Sattwa*, and to each is attached a certain distinctive quality. *Rajas* is the restless urgent principle, *Tamas* the heavy, inert, and enveloping, and *Sattwa* the light and illuminating. All, subservient to spirit, run like three twisted cords through the whole of Nature. The diversity of Nature is due to one quality predominating over another, but at the same time, the predominant quality is dependent on the other two, and cannot act alone. The Samkya philosophy explains this contrariety of properties as follows:

If the only operating quality were *Rajas*, the universe would be an increasing round of activity, so nature provides against this by the restraining influence of *Tamas*. Again, if there were no enlightening agency in the shape of *Sattwa*, nature would be nothing better than a mass of blind forces acting at haphazard.

In the chapter on the endocrine glands, attention was called to this idea of three principles entering into every phenomenon. Physiology provides many examples of actions that are not direct, but through the intermediary of another. Endocrinology is particularly rich in such examples, and repeatedly we find the pituitary acting in the role of *Sattwa*, the enlightening agent that regulates and controls the action of a gland (*Rajas*) on the passive structure of the body (*Tamas*). Similar examples can be found in the physiology of blood-coagulation, of digestive processes, and of the oxygenation of the blood. It is, of course, quite possible that this is mere coincidence, and that there is no correspondence between these physiological triads and those of the

<sup>1</sup> The idea of the triad appears also in certain Western philosophies, notably in that of Hegel.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Samkya philosophy. It must be remembered, however, that there are other ideas in the ancient Samkya philosophy that are now being accepted by Western thinkers. (For example, Kant's idea that time and space existed only in the mind, and were not necessarily attributes of reality.) It is quite possible, therefore, that in the idea of the three *gunas* there exists the germ of some principle that Western thought has not yet recognized.

Mind, according to the Vedānta, is material, and therefore is itself the result of the action of the three *gunas*. After describing the hindrances to thought in the untrained mind, the Yoga sutras of Patañjali continue as follows:

Mind stuff has three aspects (*gunas*), as appears from the fact that it has a disposition to vividness, to activity and to inertia. The *Sattwa* of the mind (vividness) when commingled with *Rajas* and *Tamas* acquires a fondness for supremacy and for objects-of-sense; while the very same *Sattwa* when pervaded with *Tamas* tends towards demerit and non-perception, and passion, and towards a failure of its own rightful supremacy; and the very same *Sattwa* — when the covering of error has dwindled away and it is illuminated and but faintly pervaded with *Rajas* — tends towards merit and knowledge and passionlessness and its own rightful supremacy.

In relation to the mind, *Rajas* acts as a distracting force, and *Tamas* as inertia. Both of these are obstacles to meditation, and it is only when the illuminating quality of *Sattwa* is supreme that the mind can become an instrument for the acquisition of higher knowledge. Because the untrained mind is always subject to distractions, not only from without but even more so from within, it must be taught restraint. This is one of the subjects discussed by Arjuna and Krishna in that immortal work, the *Bhagavat Gita*.

The mind [says Arjuna] is fickle, boisterous, strong and obstinate, and I think that to restrain it is as difficult as to restrain the wind. Krishna replies that the mind may be restrained by 'practice and indifference to worldly objects'. He goes on to say that devotion cannot be attained without self-restraint, but that the man who has self-restraint and works to achieve devotion may succeed in acquiring it. He gives no further explanation of what is meant by 'practice and

## THE VEDĀNTA

indifference to worldly objects'. For this information we have to go to the Yoga Sūtras of Patañjali, where Yoga is defined as 'the restraint of the movements of the mind', and practice as 'the effort for keeping it steady'. Patañjali also explains what is meant by the second requisite mentioned by Krishna, 'indifference to worldly objects'. This, says Patañjali, 'is the consciousness of having subdued desires for objects visible, and those also which are only heard of'. Instructions are then given in the Yoga Sūtras for the attainment of this state of non-attachment.

The religion, the culture, and even the social institutions of the two hundred and fifty million people who call themselves Hindus is based on the Vedas. These were handed down orally together with the Upanishads, in which philosophical truths are often presented in story form. The Upanishads, many of which are of extraordinary beauty, are of the greatest interest, since they present in a manner that is easy to understand the quintessence of the wisdom of the Vedas. They are, in fact, philosophical poems. As an illustration may be given the Maitrī Upanishad, translated by J. G. Bennett. The story concerns a certain King Brihadratha, who 'having established his son in the sovereignty, and reflecting on the transiency of this body, ceased to value the things of this world and went forth into the forest', in search of understanding. There, living the life of an ascetic, he meets a teacher, Shakayanya, of whom he asks divine knowledge. Shakayanya, after offering him other gifts, finally agrees to give him that for which he has asked, knowledge of what is the Self.

*Maitrī Upanishad: Second Prapathaka.*

1. Then the blessed Shakayanya, well pleased, addressed the king and said, 'Great King, Brihadratha, glory of thy race, soon indeed shalt thou attain to knowledge of the Self and reach the final goal. This Self which thou seckest is verily thine own'.  
'What Self is that, Lord?'
2. He answered: 'Thou must go aloft out of the darkness of thy present state, into that which breathes without breathing, that which, though motionless, reaches all worlds. There only wilt thou find the Self.

'For thus saith the blessed Maitrī, "That Serene One who is

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

beyond the senses, dwells in the highest consciousness and is united with the truth. That is the Self, that is the Immortal, the Fearless, that is Brahman!"

3. 'Now indeed, O king, this is divine knowledge, the knowledge contained in all the Upanishads, revealed to us by our blessed teacher, Maitri. To thee will I relate it.'

The Valakhilyas verily had put away all evil deeds. With vigorous effort they lived the holy life. They went to Prajapati Kratu and said: 'Lord, this body is like a cart, without intelligence. To what Being, higher than the senses, belongs the power whereby this body has become united with mind? Who is its driver? What thou knowest, O Lord, reveal to us.'

Prajapati answered

4. 'It is from above and not from below, that this body is endowed with intelligence. There is that Self, above the senses, above the mind, pure, clean, tranquil, unbreathing, selfless, endless, undecaying, eternal, firm and everlasting. He abides in his own greatness. By him this body is endowed with mind. Thus is it that the driver stands upon the cart'

Then they said:

'Lord, if that Highest Being is beyond our joy and suffering, what is the body and what is mind to Him? How canst thou say that for His Sake, mind becomes the driver?'

He answered

5. 'Truly, that subtle, intangible, invisible One pervades the body with but a small part of Himself, and that small part is not conscious of the whole, even as a sleeper, before he awakens, knows not the waking state

'Now indeed, that which each man calls himself, is merely that small part of man which has the marks of desire, restless striving and self-conceit: thus they call individuality. And yet this mind must take possession of the body, in other words, this mind must be its driver'

Then they said:

'But Lord, if this mind, which is to be the driver of this body, is truly a part of that passionless Being, how does it not know its Master?'

He replied:

6. 'That Highest Being is differentiated by stages into the mindless

## THE VEDANTA

body, the five bodily powers, the human personality, and the psychic functions.

'In the last stage, he pierces the opening of the senses, he goes forth and enjoys the external world. Through the senses, he perceives external objects, his reins are the organs of perception, his horses, the organs of action. This body is the cart and the driver is the mind. The whip is the formation of decision. Thus driven, the body performs its duty, like the wheel controlled by the potter. Thus comes this body into the possession of consciousness. Thus, indeed, mind becomes the driver

- 7 'Verily, the Self — so we are told — is not reached by actions bright or dark, is not touched by this return to body after body here on earth. Unmanifest, subtle, unknowable, incomprehensible, free from self, he abides yet acts not. Pure and stainless, He abides in Himself. Hidden by the veil of the gunas, He remains firm. Yea, He remains firm!'

*Maitri Upanishad* Third Prapathaka

1. Then they said, 'Lord, if thou declarest thus the greatness of this Self, then what is that other which is also known as self. Who is he that, reaping the bright and dark fruits of action, is born again, better or worse, his course upward or downward, by dualism led astray?'

2. Prajapati replied:

'There is another indeed called the material essence, which suffers the good and evil consequences of actions bright and dark. This is he whose course is upward or downward, by dualism led astray

'There are five subtle substances which are called by the name of matter. Now the combination of these is said to be the body, the active principle of which is called the material essence.

'This essence, like a drop of water on a lotus leaf, is controlled by the three gunas, the forces of nature. Thus controlled, he is confused, and being confused, he knows not the Great Self, the Master who abides within. Carried along by the stream of gunas, unsteady, wavering, bewildered, full of desire, distracted, this material essence falls into the state of self-conceit. Then, when he thinks: "This is I", and "That is mine", he binds himself with himself, as a bird is bound with a snare.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

'And so it comes about that, suffering the bright or dark fruits of actions, he is born again better or worse, his course upward or downward, by dualism led astray'

*Maitri Upanishad* Fourth Prapathaka

Then indeed those Vāḥkilyas, with passions subdued, filled with wonder, drew near and said 'Lord, adoration be to thee! Instruct us further Thou art our way of escape. There is no other.

'What is the means by which this material essence may be freed from its state of separation and attain to union with the Self?'

Then he said to them:

2. 'It has been said in the scriptures, "Like the waves in great rivers, what that material essence has once done cannot be turned back. It is borne on towards death irresistibly, like the tides of the sea. It is bound like a cripple, by the bonds of good and evil deeds. It is bereft of liberty like a prisoner in his cell, filled with fear like one before a judge. Intoxicated is it with delusion, like one drunk with wine, driven hither and thither like one in the power of an enemy. Bitten is it by external objects, like one bitten by a great snake. It is like one in great darkness, the darkness of passion. Deluded is it, like one deceived by enchantment or by visions in a dream. Its reality is unsubstantial, like the pith of a banyan tree. Its dress is ever changing, like that of an actor. Falsely fair is it, like a painted scene."

'Again it is written "Objects of sound and touch and sight are valueless, yet valuing them, the material essence becomes attached, and through attachment, remembers not the highest state."'

3. 'The remedy for the material essence is this: the acquisition of knowledge through the scriptures and devotion to his rightful duty. Devotion to his necessary duties, and the requirements of his state in holy life this is the rule of right action. All other rules are subsidiary to this. By following this rule, his tendency is upwards, otherwise he can only sink to lower levels still. The way of right action is taught in the scriptures. Neglect of right action cannot lead to progress in the holy life. It is sometimes said that great efforts can relieve a man of duty. That is not right. And yet without great efforts, there is no success in gaining knowledge of the Self, nor any perfection of work. For thus has it been said:

## THE VEDĀNTA

“Goodness is won by great effort,  
Discrimination is won by goodness,  
From discrimination is the Self attained,  
Attaining Whom, there is no further birth.” ’

*Maitri Upanishad: Sixth Prapathaka.*

Shakayanya then revealed to Brihadratha the origin of the world and the union of the Self with Brahman, the supreme, the immortal Soul of the world.

Having spoken these things, his thoughts collected, Shakayanya did obeisance to him, and said, ‘By this Brahma-knowledge, O King, did the sons of Prajapati ascend the path of Brahman.

‘This deepest mystery should not be taught save to a son or to a pupil, not to one who has not a tranquil mind. Nevertheless, it may be taught to a devoted pupil who is properly prepared.

‘Let him seek conditions which will sustain the fire of his ardour. Let him abide in goodness, intent upon the Truth, speaking the Truth, meditating upon the Truth, worshipping the Truth. Thus shall he continue and he will verily attain the true Brahman, with whom uniting he becomes other. So he gains the reward of freedom from all bonds, he is liberated from expectation, from fear and from desire. He attains the imperishable, immeasurable bliss and abides therein ’

## CHAPTER X

### Y O G A

THE Samkya philosophy has a great deal in common with the Objective Idealism of Kant and Hegel. Kant, like the Samkya philosophy, asserts that through our sense organs alone we cannot perceive the nature of things in themselves, but only the properties that we have projected on to them. By means of sensuous perception and inference we shall never stand face to face with reality, and any hope that with a little more knowledge the intervening veil will be torn aside is futile. All that we shall gain from more knowledge is a better acquaintance with the veil and not with that which it conceals.

But where Eastern differs from Western Idealism is that Eastern Idealism maintains that although sensuous perception can take us no further, there are other faculties that can. As these faculties do not work automatically in a man, they must be developed by effort, practice and devotion.

It is perhaps incorrect to state categorically that Western Idealism denies that there are any means of going further along the path to truth than sensuous perception permits us. Kant points out that man is an object in the universe; and consequently he himself is a phenomenon behind which stands a noumenon. As well as possessing an empirical self, he also possesses a transcendental self. Man's empirical self is a chaos of wishes, desires and actions that are as completely predetermined as are the movements of matter in the physical world. His transcendental self belongs, however, to the noumenal world, and it is this self that is capable of knowing the real. Kant identifies the transcendental self with the moral self and states that when we act in accordance with the laws of our moral being, we can escape from the limitations of the senses. He makes no attempt to lay down precisely what are the moral laws that we must obey if we are to reach the transcendental self, demanding only that we should act in accordance with certain general principles which we intuitively recognize as being

## YOGA

morally binding. These general principles are of a kind that all people, irrespective of creed, accept as moral. But although the principles are recognized intuitively they are never opposed to reason. Kant asserts that wrong conduct is self-contradictory and so can never become universal without being stultified. If everyone were to lie, nobody would believe anybody else, so that lying would become useless. This is the meaning of Kant's maxim: 'Act only according to that maxim which you can at the same time will to be a universal law.'

So far Kant and the Vedântist philosopher see eye to eye. In order to apprehend higher truth beyond the range of sensuous perception, man must act in conformity with moral values that he recognizes intuitively. There exists, moreover, a parallel between Kant's form of intuition and his categories of understanding, and the Eastern philosopher's *Savitarka* and *Savichara*. Intuition apprehends directly and therefore requires only exposition, our ordinary understanding of the universe comes indirectly and must be followed by inference. The yogi makes use of the method of direct apprehension, termed by Kant intuition.

But Kant cannot tell us how the transcendental self that apprehends directly can be developed. Here the Vedântist philosopher is far more explicit, and by referring us to the ancient system of mind control known as Yoga indicates the path to higher levels of thought and to knowledge that lies beyond the range of sensuous perception.

The word 'yoga' having two recognized Sanscrit roots, can have two possible meanings, one 'to meditate', and the other 'to join'. In the latter sense it is similar to the English word 'yoke', implying a joining of the unenlightened nature of man to the enlightened and divine part of himself, so that the higher guides and transmutes the lower. The word 'yoga' also signifies a disciplining of the mind by mental concentration. Patañjali, in his aphorisms, believed to have been written in the second or third century before Christ, defines Yoga as 'the restricting of the fluctuations of the mind-stuff'. When the mind is so controlled 'the seer abideth in himself'. When this control is lacking the self identifies itself with the interminable flux of the mind, so that instead of having a spiritual insight into the true nature of existence, there exist only mental obscuration and ignorance. The whole aim of

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

yoga is to get rid of this ignorance, and to make direct contacts with what yogis and buddhists call right knowledge.

Yoga is of immense age. Its origin in India is generally believed to be contemporary with the arrival of the Aryan conquerors, but some authorities are of opinion that it existed in the pre-Aryan Age. The Tamil-speaking Dravidians, the Aryans' predecessors, have always asserted that they, the indigenous people of India, possessed knowledge of Yoga and taught it to their conquerors. Recent excavations in Sind and the Punjab have unearthed evidence that seems to corroborate this statement. Amongst other images found have been those of a human form seated in the *āsana* which is characteristic of the Buddha, and apparently representing Siva, 'Lord of Beasts, Prince of Yogis'. Across the top of the image runs a script which, till now, no one has deciphered. The Dravidian-speaking peoples have always claimed that Siva was their god and that he taught their fathers yoga practices.

Archaeologists believe that human culture spread from three great sources—the Egyptian, the Mesopotamian, and the culture of the Valley of the Indus. The last-named proved to be the most successful since it survived longest. Sir John Marshall, commenting on recent Indian excavations, remarked that, although in the lowest levels finds were abundant, no weapons or city walls were unearthed. In the upper levels of later ages a few weapons in the form of small spear-points were discovered, but they seemed so inefficient as to be more suitable for decoration than for use. Gerald Heard discusses the significance of these discoveries in his book, *The Sources of Civilization*, and attempts to find an answer to the question how cities without defensive walls and arms could have survived for such a long period. He suggests that it was due to the existence of a high form of culture in which yoga practices played a large part.

To the Indian philosopher truth is not only a fact, but is also a value, and the purpose of the yogi is, therefore, both to discover truth and to realize it in living. An intellectual assent to a doctrine is not enough; as the result of the discovery of truth a new life must be inaugurated. Hence, the personal discipline to which the Eastern philosopher willingly submits himself. This discipline comprises what are known as the eight *Angas* of yoga, self-restraint, observance, posture, regula-

## YOGA

tion of breathing, withdrawal of the senses, steadying of the mind, meditation and contemplation. The aim of all these is to assist the disciple to ascend from the restricted and low level of consciousness of ordinary existence to the larger vision of the yogi. Yoga is, therefore, a practical method for developing in a man many capacities that he does not ordinarily possess.

For many thousands of years the sages of India have known that by right training and effort a man can gain extraordinary control over his body and mind. Yoga is eminently 'practical', but it must be remembered that it is only this when taught by a master or *guru*. The numerous books on 'Yoga' that have swept in a fashionable flood through the drawing-rooms of England and America are, no doubt, interesting, but they are useless. Even translations of authentic texts, like the Yoga Sutras of Patañjali, are useless, for no one, unaided by a teacher, can understand or put into practice what he reads there. The books themselves are written in a manner that strongly suggests that they are commentaries, or note-books, which are only meant to recall to a student's mind what he has already learnt from his teacher. They supplement, and do not stand in the place of the teacher.

Yoga acts on the liberal principle that men of different nature can best achieve their object by concentrating on different aspects of yoga. Thus men of deep religious feeling will find in *Bhakti-yoga* (or the yoga of right religious action) the best approach to the subject. *Karma-yoga*, or the yoga of right action, is suited to those who have not retired from the world, and *Jñāna-yoga* (Yoga of Knowledge) is for men of wide education. And because control of the body is an essential step to control of the mind, *Hatha-yoga* (the yoga of power over the body) must be an accessory to the study of other aspects of yoga. Finally there is *Rājā-yoga*, or the yoga of the development of consciousness, which stands in the same position relative to the mind as *Hatha-yoga* does to the body. All these yogas are not separate studies, but different aspects of the same subject, which permit of a variety of approaches for different types of men.

It is with *Hatha-yoga*, or the yoga of body control, that the Western world is best acquainted. This is due to the fact that the outward manifestations of *Hatha-yoga* are obvious, whereas changes in consciousness

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

are not. For this reason popular writers have tended to create the impression that yoga is little else than a method of acquiring bodily tricks. It must be remembered, however, that the attainment of control over the body is only a means to an end, and not an end in itself. A healthy and well-regulated body is an aid to the attainment of a controlled mind and of a higher level of consciousness. For this reason the body also is brought under the discipline of yoga

Having indicated the general character of Yoga it will now be advisable to consider separately its various branches

*Hatha-Yoga.* Not only must the body be brought into a state of health, but it must be taught to do its work expeditiously and with the least possible consumption of energy. In every machine there exists a ratio between its expenditure of energy and the work that it performs, and although physiologists have shown that the body, judged on this basis, is an immeasurably more efficient machine than the best petrol engine, it nevertheless wastes a great deal of its energy. One of the purposes of Hatha-yoga is to reduce this wastage to a minimum, so that more energy can be directed to the attainment of higher states of consciousness. By special methods control can be exercised not only over movements which are normally under the dominance of the will, but also over involuntary activities, such as respiration, digestion and the circulation. Control over the muscles is assisted by the adoption of certain postures (the *āsanas*) (Among these *āsanas* is the well-known sitting posture assumed by the Buddha, in which each foot is placed on the opposite knee, heels upwards) Many of the *āsanas* are extremely difficult and to be able to assume them for an indefinite time, not only without physical strain, but with every muscle relaxed, is beyond the power of an ordinary man.

Because of the close links that exist between the outward posture and the inner state, different *āsanas* may be assumed for the carrying out of different mental exercises. It is well known, for instance, that the attitude usually adopted for prayer induces an inner feeling of reverence and worship. So also are other *āsanas* suited to the different yoga mental practices.

*Pranayama* is the control of the breathing, but *prāna*, to the yogi, signifies more than the breath. *Prāna* is the vital force that pervades the

## YOGA

whole body, and is the mainstay of every form of activity. It is also the common factor behind the function of the five senses and of what are known as the five motor organs. He who gains control over *prāṇa*, at the same time gains control over all organs of automatic action.

Hatha-yoga also concerns itself with the overcoming of pain, and popular literature is full of statements about the ability of yogis to submit to pain that no other person could tolerate. Some of these statements, however, really refer to fakirs, who are using the control they have obtained for other purposes than those of the yogi, and sometimes only as a means of livelihood. Yogis have very little in common with fakirs. Well authenticated cases are on record of masters of Hatha-Yoga who have gained such control over vital processes that they have been able to pass into a state of suspended animation resembling that of a hibernating animal. A famous instance of this was Sadhu Haridas, who is recorded to have been buried for four months under the supervision of the Maharajah of Lahore, early in the last century, and to have been disinterred alive. The yogi was sealed in a chest by the Maharajah, then buried and barley seeds sown over his grave. The grave was enclosed by a wall, and guarded night and day by sentries. On the day of interment the yogi's face was shaved, and it is reported that when disinterred his face was still smooth, indicating that growth had been suspended. It is interesting to recall that the pituitary gland is believed to exercise control over the phenomenon of hibernation. Feats like this resulting from the mastery of Hatha-yoga are of the greatest interest to physiologists, but when divorced from spiritual ends, may, as Patañjali points out, become impediments rather than aids to progress.

*Karma-Yoga*, or the Yoga of Right Action. This is a necessary adjunct to every other kind of yoga, but is of special importance to the man who has not become a recluse, but has remained in the world of affairs. In the *Bhagavat Gita*, when Arjuna is in a state of perplexity not knowing what he should do, and forced by circumstances to take part in a battle that seemed to him useless and stupid, he seeks Krishna's help. He describes himself as bewildered and not knowing whether to fight or to withdraw. He realizes that only by renunciation of the world can the highest level of living be attained, and he is deeply con-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

cerned because, at that moment, he is on the eve of leading his hosts into battle. Krishna agrees that the contemplative life is the highest, and describes the attitude of the seer.

With the mind concentrated by yoga, and with an attitude of evenness towards all things, he beholds himself in all beings, and all beings in himself. Alike in pleasure and in pain, established in the Self, regarding a clod of earth, a stone, or gold alike, the same to the loved and to the unloved, steady, the same to censure and praise, to honour and disgrace, and to friend and foe, relinquishing all undertakings, — such a person is said to have transcended the *gunas*

But as Krishna explains, Arjuna has not relinquished the world; he is the captain of the hosts for whose leadership in battle he is responsible. Arjuna's present duty is to fight

If through self-conceit you think that you will not fight, vain is this resolve, your very nature will constrain you.

Krishna points out that it is useless for a man to give up external actions until he has been able to give up the desire that is behind them. So Arjuna's proper course is to do his duty.

He who is free from the notion of egoism, whose intellect is not affected by good or evil, kills not, though (outwardly) he may kill these people, nor is he bound (by the action)

**Karma-yoga** is the form of yoga that, if it were available, would be most applicable to European and American conditions of life. The principles that it inculcates would not only eliminate that state of fear and anxiety in which nine out of ten of us live, but actually increase the efficiency of the active life to which we are inevitably committed

**Bhakti-Yoga** This is the yoga of the religious man, the man with a strong emotional feeling of the presence of a personal God. It is the simplest of the yoga paths. A man either feels the presence of God, or he does not, no intellectual proof is possible, or demanded. If he does feel it, the emotion is linked with a desire to surrender himself to God. Because Bhakti-yoga is akin to Christianity and other religions, it is an aspect of yoga that is more intelligible to the average European.

## YOGA

But it is the personal religion of the religious mystic and not institutional religion that is akin to Bhakti-yoga. Bhakti-yoga, like other forms of yoga, includes methods of concentration, meditation and contemplation, but the object on which the devotee in this case concentrates is 'God', and not the 'Self'.

Patañjali, although he himself did not believe in a Personal God, acknowledges the great value of Bhakti-yoga to those who are temperamentally suited to this way.

Amongst various ways of attaining yoga, one of the quickest is through complete devotion to God. God is spirit, untouched by human modifications, in whom is infinite that omniscience which in man is but a germ

*Jñāna-Yoga.* As Bhakti-yoga is the approach to yoga that is suited to the devout and emotional man, so is Jñāna-yoga that which is suited to the scholar. Finding that by the use of logic and the perception of the five senses, it is impossible to solve the enigmas of life and of the universe, the intellectual man is inevitably brought to the realization that only by the cultivation of new faculties can he go further in his quest. Jñāna-yoga is the gateway to a new method of apprehension, the direct apprehension that comes through meditation and contemplation. But as riches constituted the chief stumbling-block to a higher way of living to the young man of great possessions in the gospels, so does his learning often prove an obstacle to the scholar, who would tread the path of Jñāna-yoga. Before he can know more, he will have to get rid of much that he has already learnt, and few people are prepared to make the particular form of sacrifice that this implies.

*Rājah-Yoga.* This yoga has the same relationship to the mind that Hatha-yoga has to the body. As Hatha-yoga establishes control over the body, eliminates unnecessary activities and increases bodily efficiency to its utmost, so does Rājah-yoga control the mind, still what Patañjali calls its 'fluctuations', and increase its capacity as an instrument of knowledge. From the point of view of Rājah-yoga, the mind is an inner mirror that reflects truth, but because it is darkened by nescience, the truth is inevitably distorted. Only by eradicating wrong ideas, false divisions and classifications, and by stilling the fluctuations that

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

disturb its tranquillity, can a true image be reflected in the mirror of consciousness. First a man must see the distortion in the mirror, and then by the methods prescribed by Rājah-yoga, set it in order so that it may be capable of giving a true picture of reality.

Rājah-yoga is chiefly concerned with consciousness. In the ordinary state the mind is lost in confused thought and feeling. It is a welter of disconnected thoughts, fantasies, broken recollections, disjointed phrases, even single words and images. The noise of this inner traffic is as unceasing as the noise heard through a window that opens on some busy thoroughfare. And much of the traffic has no purpose or meaning, for the same thoughts, the same broken phrases return again and again, running along well-worn tracks. There are few silences in ordinary life. Part of the work of Rājah-yoga is to stop this meaningless and unprofitable traffic of the mind, so that it may become conscious of what, at other times, it has been unaware

Yoga [says Patañjali] is attained by the control, and ultimately the suppression at will, of all forms of thinking, and is gained by determined and sustained effort, coupled with increasing detachment and dispassion. At first it is achieved spasmodically, but in time, and with steady effort, it becomes an habitual state.

Progress in Rājah-yoga is divided into various stages according to the degree of broadening that the consciousness has attained. When the disciple has reached the final stage, he sees himself not as an isolated and separate being, but as a drop in the ocean of the spirit and as a drop that in itself contains all that is in the ocean.

The eye of the sea is one thing, and the foam another; leave the foam and look with the eye of the sea.

Day and night there is the movement of foam-flecks from the sea: thou beholdest the foam, but not the sea.

There are other classifications of yoga, for example, that given by Evans-Wentz, in *Tibetan Yoga and Secret Doctrine*. It is not proposed to describe these alternative classifications here.

In one sense Yoga may be regarded as an applied psychology of religion, and from this ancient science have been derived many religious invocations, prayers, chants, meditations, as well as the telling of beads.

## YOGA

Evans-Wentz states that there are reasons for believing that the training of the candidate for initiation into the ancient mysteries was largely based on yoga. So also, in his opinion, were many of the practices of the early Christian Church.

When the early Christians, both Gnostic and non-Gnostic, dwelt in the desert and mountain solitudes of Egypt and the Near East, as solitary hermits or in communities vowed to the three vows, of poverty, chastity and obedience, they grafted into the tree of the Christian Faith a form of yoga which appears to have had sources both in the monasticism of the ancient Egyptian priests and in that of the early Zoroastrians and Hindus. To-day, more so in the Latin, Greek, Coptic, Armenian, and Abyssinian, than in the Anglican or Protestant Churches, yogic practices which have had, in at least some degree, this pre-Christian origin are of prime importance. (*Tibetan Yoga and Secret Doctrine*, by W. Y. Evans-Wentz, p. 36)

In all yogas certain milestones, or steps on the path, are recognized:

The first step consists of intellectual comprehension of the teachings as contained in exoteric scriptures. The second step is dependent upon gaining spiritual comprehension of the teachings; or, in other words, upon attaining yogic insight into their esoteric significance. The third step consists of glimpses of reality; and the fourth of full realization. Otherwise stated, there are the sowing of the seed, its germination, the growth, and the fruition (Ibid, p. 37)

Whether the similarities that exist between certain religious practices and those taught by yogis are explained by religious teachers having utilized the incredibly ancient knowledge of yoga for the purposes of religion, or whether religious leaders rediscovered the value of these methods, it is, of course, impossible to say. It is not the explanation of the similarity, but the existence of the similarity that is of importance. Although the exact technique and the terms that are employed, differ with different religions, the essentials remain the same. The Hindu would describe the goal of yoga as a joining of the part to the whole, the microcosm with the macrocosm, the individualized aspect of con-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

sciousness with the cosmic, or universal, aspect; the Buddhist would describe it as meaning the merging of the drop with the ocean, and as the transcending of the "sangsara" (or the universe of phenomenal existence); the Christian and Mohammedan, as meaning union with God. The paths of the Yogi and of all devout worshippers run side by side.

## CHAPTER XI

### HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

A BOOK is the record of a journey of the author's mind through the world of ideas, and as a pedestrian who has climbed slowly out of his familiar valley, pauses for a moment to look back along his tracks in order that he may know where he stands, so must an author at a certain stage in his journey orientate his thoughts by taking stock of what has gone before. If this pause is necessary in the case of a traveller who has made similar journeys before, it is still more necessary to one who undertakes it for the first time

Medical men are inclined to eschew the company of philosophers. When Descartes drew a sharp line between matter and spirit, he at the same time drew a line between scientists and philosophers. Henceforward scientists took charge of matter and philosophers dealt as best they could with spirit. The scientists were thoroughly satisfied with what had been apportioned to them, for they felt that matter was something that was tangible and real. When examined it behaved reasonably and in accordance with laws that were intelligible to the ordinary man. Physicians, so long as they confined their attention to the body, experienced a similar satisfaction. The body was a tractable object for study. So they took it to pieces, found how each organ worked, noted the changes that occurred when it became diseased, and did their best to rectify the resulting disorder with the remedies at their disposal. What was particularly encouraging was the fact that the methods employed by the scientists and the doctors gave excellent practical results. These were of such a high order that they were sufficient to set the seal of justification upon the methods. How different from this appeared the lot of the philosopher, who could apparently produce nothing except nebulous theories, which when scrutinized by other philosophers were liable to disappear into thin air. It was with something of the indulgence shown by grown-ups to fanciful children that medical men looked at their less fortunate colleagues.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Small wonder therefore that a medical man who has wandered so far from that safe and familiar enclosure should pause for a moment in order to take stock of where he stands. The 'Self', the Absolute, the limitations of sensuous perceptions, knowledge obtained by direct perception; what has he to do with such philosophical conceptions? He is in a strange region where all the well-known landmarks are hidden under mist. Yet the journey has to be made, if for no other reason than that the enclosure in which scientists and physicians worked no longer exists. First came the discovery of the physicists that matter did not behave as they had a right to expect it to behave. Within a short lapse of time it had become 'a kink in time-space', 'an electron mush', 'a wave of probability undulating into nothingness', 'a collection of charges of electricity, which are not charging in anything', 'a system of spatio-temporal events whose qualities are exclusively mathematical' (C. E. M. Joad). Then in the medical world came the discovery that man was more than a collection of organs packed up in a skin wrapping, that disorders of the body often turned out to be disorders of the mind, and that the mind defied the laws of cause and effect.

The effect of all these discoveries was to force the doctor, however unwilling he might be, to pay some attention to the theories of the philosophers. It is no longer possible for scientists and medical men to get on with their job and leave speculation to the philosophers. The Cartesian division has disappeared and scientific, medical and philosophical theories are becoming hopelessly intermixed. It is true that a few psychologists, such as Dr. Watson, refuse to take notice of the change, and by donning the white coat of the scientific researcher and retiring into a laboratory, hope to continue their work undisturbed. But the hope is a vain one, for medicine, psychology, philosophy and religion can no longer be kept in separate compartments.

Let us take stock of the situation so far as this book is concerned. In the opening chapters it was shown that the behaviour of a man is to a great extent determined by his endocrine pattern, and by the structure of his central nervous system. Man was, to all intents and purposes, found to be a machine driven by the driving-belt of the sensory impressions that reach him from the outside world. An examination of the medical-psychological views of this and of the last century endorsed

this view. Dr. Watson and his colleagues of the behaviourist school are particularly emphatic on the subject of determinism. A little later on it was discovered that this mechanical view of man and of the universe was itself determined by the nature of scientific inquiry. Since the scientist studies only the relation of cause and effect, he must necessarily discover it in all that he examines. This being so it was thought advisable before accepting as final the scientists' view that the universe was a vast machine, to seek the opinion of other experts. Eastern and Western philosophical writings were consulted. Here we found many differences of opinion but at the same time a striking similarity of view. The philosophers agree that although the great bulk of thoughts and feelings and actions in a man are automatic, there yet remains a residuum that seems to be otherwise. Two schools of philosophy, in particular, were studied and found to be in agreement, the Vedântist school of India and the Objective Idealism of Kant. Starting from different premises and using different methods both have arrived at the same conclusion, namely, that empirical man is, to all intents and purposes, automatic and incapable of apprehending reality, but that there exists another faculty in man with a larger view and capacity. Finally it was pointed out that there were methods by means of which this capacity could be developed, so that a man might become other than he is. It is at this point that we now stand.

Having discussed the limitations of sense perceptions and of ordinary mind we are now in a position to go further, and consider whether it be possible to obtain knowledge in any other way. We live in a dark house, but is it a house into which some light may be admitted? This is, perhaps, the most important question that a man can ask, and it is a question to which the yogis, the great religious geniuses and the mystics have given an answer. It will now be for us to examine these answers and to note whether we find any discrepancies in them. First we shall consider the answer given by the mystics.

Many criticisms have been brought to bear on states of consciousness that have been included under the ambiguous term mystical. The first is that they are definitely pathological, occurring in ill-balanced and neurotic people. There is a general tendency to regard any psychological manifestation of an unusual nature as pathological, and Max

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Nordau, in his book *Degeneration*, discovers what he takes to be stigmata of degeneration in the majority of well-known geniuses. According to this author there are few great works of art that have not emanated from degenerate sources. If the great artists have come under this suspicion in a health-conscious age, it is not surprising that the great religious geniuses should also be suspected. What seems to justify this suspicion is the fact that many of the states that have been labelled mystical are undoubtedly pathological. The late Sir James Crichton-Browne, for example, included under this term what he refers to as 'dreamy states'. Used, therefore, indiscriminately the term mystical may easily become synonymous with unhealthy. But it must be frankly admitted that many of the accounts of mystical experiences found in literature are in reality accounts of hysterical states. Baron von Hugel, in the second volume of *The Mystical Element in Religion*, takes the symptoms of hysteria alluded to by Professor Janet in his *Etat Mental des Hystériques*, and shows that they can be paralleled in the life of St Catherine of Genoa. In his *Psychology of Religions*, Professor Thouless also draws attention to this parallel.

There is first [he writes] the very characteristic hysterical phenomenon of anaesthesia in which cutaneous sensibility is lost over an area of the body. It is recorded that St. Catherine would press thorny rose-twigs in both her hands, and this without any pain. There is also found among hysterics an exaggerated affective reaction to contact or to certain colours. Of St. Catherine it is recorded that . . . for a day and a night her flesh could not be touched because of the great pain that such touching caused her. Later she was so sensitive that it was impossible to touch her very clothes or the bedstead, or a single hair on her head, because in such case she would cry out as though she had been grievously wounded. Professor Thouless also refers to St. Catherine's inability to stand or to walk, her difficulty in eating on account of spasms of the throat or stomach, and the skin eruptions from which she suffered. He sums up his conclusions as follows: 'There seems no sufficient ground for supposing that mysticism is merely hysteria misunderstood by a superstitious and wondering age, but there can be little doubt that certain forms of mysticism and hysteria are on their psycho-physical side closely

## • HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

related. Possibly the extent of their connection is that both are characterized by a dissociation of personality, and that the symptoms that they have in common are the symptoms of this dissociation. At the same time, it must be noticed that St. Catherine of Genoa is a mystic in whom the relationship is particularly marked, for she was suffering at the end of her life from a psychogenic disease, a condition which is by no means universal amongst mystics.

It must be admitted that many geniuses, both artistic and religious, do actually display pathological traits. It would almost seem as though Nature, having given them with one hand a priceless gift, redresses the balance by withdrawing with the other some of the advantages possessed by less highly endowed individuals. What is true of geniuses is also true of many men and women who seem to possess unusual psychic powers, and have had uncommon psychic experiences, such as knowledge of events occurring in the future, or at a distance. It may even happen that illness itself temporarily enhances a man's psychic powers. Some of R. L. Stevenson's best writing was done during bouts of fever. The mind of Nietzsche, like an electric bulb carrying too heavy a charge, flashed into white heat and then, broken by the strain, went out in darkness. So also may the disturbances occurring in the brain of an epileptic awaken higher faculties for the moment, just as the brain of a drowning man may recount the whole panorama of life in a few seconds of time. An excellent account of an exalted state of mind before an epileptic fit is given by Dostoevsky in *The Idiot*. Since the author himself was an epileptic it may be assumed that this description is based on personal experience. Speaking of the epileptic, Prince Muishkin, he says:

He remembered that during his epileptic fits, or rather, immediately preceding them, he had always experienced a moment or two when his whole heart and mind seemed to wake up to vigour and light, when he became filled with joy and hope, and all his anxieties seemed to be swept away for ever; these moments were but presentiments, as it were, of the one final second (it was never more than a second) in which the fit came upon him. That second (of course) was inexpressible. When

his attack was over, and the prince reflected on his symptoms, he used to say to himself "These moments, short as they are, when I feel such extreme consciousness of myself and consequently more of life than at other times, are due only to the disease — to the sudden rupture of normal conditions. Therefore they are not really a higher kind of life, but a lower." This reasoning, however, seemed to end in a paradox, and to lead to the further consideration: "What matter though it be only a disease, an abnormal tension of the brain, if when I recall and analyse the moment, it seems to have been one of harmony and beauty in the highest degree — an instant of deeper sensation, overflowing with unbounded joy and rapture, ecstatic devotion, and completest life?" These instants were characterized — to define it in a word — by an intense quickening of the sense of personality. Since in the last conscious moment preceding the attack, he could say to himself, with full understanding of his words: "I would give my whole life for this one instant", then doubtless, to him, it really was worth a lifetime

The second objection, namely, that knowledge obtained through mystical states has no objective value, must now be examined. One of the arguments that is commonly used by the school of psychology that denies the validity of all religious knowledge is the statement that the facts of religious consciousness can be explained by scientific laws. If psychology can explain the experiences of the religious man along strictly scientific lines the transcendental nature of religious knowledge is discounted. Many psychologists would go further than this. They would affirm that a scientific explanation of the transcendental means by which the religious man has reached his conclusions not only discounts the means, but also, the conclusions. Such an argument is not logically justified. Even if scientists could explain mystical states it would only imply that they could find no psychological support for the truth of the knowledge reached in these states.

The problem of the objective validity of religious knowledge can be resolved into two parts, first, the validity of the means by which it is obtained, and second, the objective value of the knowledge itself. We will first deal with the value of the means. Those that claim that religious knowledge is valid assert that it is knowledge belonging to a

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

higher state of consciousness. The human mind has been compared to a spectrum by F. W. H. Myers. Ordinary consciousness is comparable with the visible part of the spectrum, and such organic processes as are unconscious with the infra-red part of the spectrum. From the part of our consciousness comparable with the ultra-violet rays come the insight of the poet, the intuition of the prophet, and the illumination of the mystic. Myers continues:

It is that prolongation of our spectrum upon which our gaze will need to be most strenuously fixed. It is there that we shall find our inquiry opening upon the cosmic prospect, and inciting us upon an endless way.

Professor Thouless is inclined to deplore the insistence of the religious man on the existence of supra-conscious levels of the mind, on the grounds that it justifies flights of the imagination and longings for that which we do not possess. He states that his chief objection to the term 'supra-conscious' is that 'it is founded on no sort of scientific evidence at all'. With this statement we must agree. Science works by measurement, and by establishing the relationship between cause and effect, and consciousness admits of no measurement. It is the one thing that cannot be objectively examined. All that science can attempt to do is to examine the phenomena that may result from the existence of different states of consciousness, and psychology, as a whole, has paid but little attention to this subject. It was long before psychologists even recognized subconsciousness, except as regards sensations (namely, that many impressions coming from the viscera were never registered by the brain). But a very much wider kind of subconsciousness is now postulated in order to give a satisfactory account of such phenomena as post-hypnotic suggestion, and of certain observations made in the realm of mental pathology. The idea of subconscious mental processes is now accepted in order to provide necessary links in an otherwise incomplete chain of mental causation.

It is only the Western schools of psychology that will not accept the idea of the super-conscious mind. Eastern schools have long accepted it, and as we have seen in the preceding chapter, the science of yoga is based on it. It is a practice amongst Buddhists, and Buddhism is closely

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

allied to yoga, to increase consciousness by observing sensations, emotions, thoughts and movement as a preliminary to contemplation. In other words, every effort is made to cultivate a greater awareness.

Nevertheless, Western psychologists look upon mystical experiences as being experiences in a lower rather than in a higher state of consciousness. One of the features of mystical illumination is the sense of conviction and of given-ness which is attached to them. The revelation appears to have come from outside and is invested with an intense sense of its truth. Professor Thouless stresses the fact that this character of given-ness belongs not only to perceptions of external reality, but also to any experiences which result from the passage of mental processes from unconscious regions of the mind to conscious.

Dreams and the vague images and intuitions which cross our minds in the waking state, equally with religious feelings, seem to be outside the stream of thought, and like religious feelings have been rationalized by attributing their origin to something outside the person experiencing them.

Psychologists who deny the existence of higher levels of consciousness would have us believe that what the religious man and the yogi regard as an illumination from above, is really an intrusion from below, what they mistake for an experience of higher consciousness is actually the experience of a dream in a waking state. Neither the psychologist nor the mystic can be convinced by any outside argument. The intensity of consciousness that is associated with any experience can be gauged only by the individual who experiences it. It would, however, seem extremely improbable that all mystical experiences are merely dreams.

The person [writes Dr. Bucke] who passes through this experience (of cosmic consciousness) will learn in the few minutes, or even moments, of its continuance, more than in months, than in years of study, and he will learn much that no study ever taught or can teach. Especially does he obtain such a conception of the *whole*, or at least, of an immense whole, as dwarfs all conception, such a conception as makes the old attempts to mentally grasp the universe and its meaning, petty, and even ridiculous.

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

No dream has ever left such a lasting impression on the dreamer as this. But Professor Thouless is strictly judicious and sums up what he believes to be the situation as follows:

We must be careful, however, to notice exactly how far these considerations have carried us. They have given us no reason for supposing that no valid argument can be drawn from the validity of religious experience from psychological data. They have shown only the weakness of this one simple, and rather crude, argument, from the *given-ness* of such an experience — the argument that because I feel that these experiences have not come from my own mind, they are due to divine action

Dean Inge in his *Studies of English Mystics* makes an excellent comment on the objections raised by specialists to mystical experiences.

The real question [he says] is whether our higher endowments are best interpreted from above or from below. Is their true nature to be found by inquiring what they grow out of, and with what physical conditions they are associated, or by inquiring what they may grow into, and to what regions of spiritual truth they may conduct us? The former is the method of pessimism . . . The more a thing is good, the higher it has risen from its first state, and consequently the more it can be degraded by identifying it with its original forms . . . Pessimism maintains that all human endeavour is futile, all progress illusory, that the attractiveness of physical or moral beauty is merely a bait by which nature entices us to subserve her purposes to our own hurt; and that the mystics are persons, who by reason of their unstable nervous system are more completely duped than their neighbours.

The second criterion by which the value of religious knowledge may be assessed is the nature of that knowledge itself, quite apart from the means by which it was obtained. Judged on these grounds it may be said that there is a general agreement between religious knowledge and that which has been gained in other ways. The writer was once asked by a traveller, who had come into contact with the mysteries of yoga, how yogis could possibly know, and long have known, much that science was only now beginning to discover. The explanation would appear to him to be simple. There exist higher levels of consciousness,

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

and men who have attained them have access to knowledge that is not accessible to those who only function on the ordinary level. To the yogi, therefore, much is known that we, working along a lower level, are only now beginning to discover. There is also available to them knowledge of a nature which is beyond ordinary comprehension.

Sir Michael Faraday in delivering a lecture before the Royal Institution in 1854 referred to the two different methods of arriving at truth, namely the method of the scientist using the intellectual faculties, and the direct apprehension of the religious man. He spoke as follows:

It would be improper here to enter upon this subject farther than to claim an absolute distinction between religious and ordinary belief. I shall be reproached with weakness and of refusing to apply those mental operations which I thought good in respect of high things to the very highest. I am content to bear the reproach . . . I have never seen anything incompatible between those things of man which can be known by the spirit of man which is within him, and those higher things concerning his future which he cannot know by that spirit.

To those who have experienced the higher states of consciousness the formulation of the knowledge obtained on these higher levels would appear to be an impossible task. All men and women who have had experience of these states agree on this point, even although the revelation carries with it an intense conviction of its significance. The mystic stands face to face with truth, but is utterly unable to put into words what he has seen. A repetition of the experience, if repetition there be, finds the truth to be the same, but the expression of it becomes, no easier.

The gate was opened to me so that in one quarter of an hour I saw and knew more than if I had been many years at a university. (JACOB BOEHME)

The experience of the mystic is always of this nature, he is overwhelmed by the importance and cognitive value of what he is seeing, and this conviction of value remains even after the state of higher consciousness has passed. Yet he can say nothing. It was with some justification that Dr Johnson remarked, 'If Mr. A. has experienced the inexpressible, he ought never to attempt to express it'.

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

One of the reasons why it is impossible for the mystic to describe his experience in words is that it is mainly an experience of the emotions. When he does attempt to convey its meaning to others, he is forced to make use of pictures and symbols, and because the experience was so emotional, he paints his pictures in the most vivid colours that are obtainable, using the most extravagant words in his vocabulary. Naturally he shows a tendency to fall back on the material with which he happens to be familiar, the Hindu talking of Brahman, the Christian of Christ and the Virgin Mary, and the Buddhist of Buddha. He therefore is attempting to explain one unknown in terms of another unknown, a unique experience by means of an Absolute whose attributes are unknowable except in terms of negation. As a result of these crude and ineffectual attempts to convey what has been experienced, mystical literature often appears ridiculous and sentimental to the reader.

Dean Inge draws a parallel between the methods employed by art and by religion in expressing the truths they want to convey. Art values the things of experience according as they are good or bad; that is according as they fulfil their proper end or not. So also does religion view things *sub specie aeternitatis*, and not according as they cause pleasure or pain to ourselves.

But the religious representation of reality is subject to more stringent restrictions than the artistic, in that since the main end of art is enjoyment, there is an element of play, of conscious illusion in its productions . . . The religious attitude is one of the highest conceivable seriousness . . . It reverences its symbols while admitting their inadequacy. We know that they are not creations of our fancy, like artistic symbols, but the spontaneous projections of a deeper faculty which we dare not trifle with. Hence comes that reluctance to subject religious symbols to rationalistic tests, which we observe everywhere in human history.

With so many obstacles in the way of interpretation, it is difficult to extract from mystical descriptions the common factors of knowledge. William James has attempted to do so, in the following words:

It is possible to give the outcome of the majority of them in terms that point in definite philosophical directions. One of these directions is optimism, and the other is monism. We pass into

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

mystical states from out of ordinary consciousness as from a less into a more, as from a smallness into a vastness, and at the same time as from an unrest to a rest. We feel them as reconciling, unifying states. They appeal to the yes-function more than to the no-function in us. In them the unlimited absorbs the limits and peacefully closes the account. Their very denial of every adjective you may propose as applicable to the ultimate truth — He, the Self, the Atman, is to be described by 'No! no!' only, say the Upanishads, — though it seems on the surface to be a no-function, is a denial made on behalf of a deeper yes. Whoso calls the Absolute anything in particular, or says that it is *this*, seems implicitly to shut it off from being *that* — it is as if he lessened it.

It may be argued that the power of religious doctrine to rationalize experience is itself a criterion, however imperfect, of its inherent truth. This is the criterion that is ordinarily employed to test the truth of a scientific theory. The atomic theory of Dalton, for example, was originated because it gave a coherent and intelligible account of many observations made in laboratories. The method that has been adopted by scientists — a method based on empiricism — is equally valid in the case of knowledge of a religious nature. It is the criterion of truth that we shall employ in this book.

An authoritative work on the subject of higher states of consciousness is Dr. R. M. Bucke's *Cosmic Consciousness*. The author was a Canadian psychiatrist, who after an unhappy childhood became a student particularly interested in books dealing with the basic problems of life. At the age of thirty-two, he came across Walt Whitman's *Leaves of Grass*, and at once realized that it contained in greater measure than any other book, what he had been looking for. But it was at the beginning of his thirty-sixth year that the event occurred that for ever afterwards transformed his thinking and his method of life. He describes how he had spent an evening in the company of two friends reading Wordsworth, Shelley, Keats, Browning, and especially Walt Whitman. They parted at midnight, and he had a long drive in a hansom (it was in an English city).

His mind, deeply under the influence of the ideas, images, and emotions called up by the reading and talk of the evening, was

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

calm and peaceful. He was in a state of quiet, almost passive enjoyment. All at once, without warning of any kind, he found himself wrapped around as it were by a flame-coloured cloud. For an instant he thought of fire, some sudden conflagration in the great city; the next he knew that the light was within himself. Directly afterwards there came upon him a sense of exultation, of immense joyousness accompanied or immediately followed by an intellectual illumination quite impossible to describe. Into his brain streamed one momentary lightning-flash of the Brahmic Splendour which has ever since lightened his life, upon his heart fell one drop of Brahmic Bliss, leaving thenceforward for always an after taste of heaven. Among other things, he did not come to believe, he saw and knew that the Cosmos is not dead matter but a living Presence, that the soul of man is immortal, that the universe is so built and ordered that without any peradventure all things work together for the good of each and all, that the foundation principle of the world is what we call love, and that the happiness of every one is in the long run absolutely certain. He claims that he learned more within the few seconds during which the illumination lasted than in previous months or even years of study, and that he learned much that no study could ever have taught.

It will be seen that this description of higher consciousness has the main features that are usual in such cases. The stage had been set beforehand by the creation of an emotional background through the reading of poetry. Then suddenly and unexpectedly the moment of illumination is ushered in by a sensation as though the whole body was flooded with flame-coloured cloud. The initiate into a new level of existence does not come to believe, but actually 'sees' that the whole of the universe is unified in a living presence, underlying, and at the same time, explaining everything, the God of Christianity, the Brahman of the Hindu. The change of consciousness lasts but a few moments, yet in that time, more is learnt than during years of study. The lesson carries with it a conviction that is not attached to knowledge acquired through the sense-organs; it is truth directly apprehended.

This change of time, this crowding into a second of a thousand different impressions and emotions, is noted by most people who have

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

experienced higher consciousness, whether occurring spontaneously or induced artificially. The writer remembers the case of a priest who while coming round from nitrous oxide anaesthesia suddenly exclaimed, 'O, Christ, in that moment I lived a hundred years, so much has happened'. Unfortunately he remembered nothing of his experiences subsequently.

The change in the rate of perception that is a feature of higher states of consciousness is beautifully described in a remarkable passage in one of the Apocryphal Gospels, 'The Book of James'.

Now I, Joseph, was walking, and I walked not. And I looked up to the air and saw the air in amazement. And I looked up into the pole of the heaven and saw it standing still, and the fowls of the heaven without motion. And I looked upon the earth and saw a dish set, and workmen lying by it, and their hands were in the dish: and they that were chewing chewed not, and they that were lifting the food lifted it not, and they that put it to their mouth put it not thereto, but the faces of all of them were looking upward. And behold there were sheep being driven, and they went not forward but stood still, and the shepherd lifted his hand to smite them with his staff, and his hand remained up. And I looked upon the stream of the river and saw the mouths of the kids upon the water, and they drank not. And of a sudden all things moved onward in their course.

A similar experience is thus expressed by the modern poet, Rupert Brooke

From the dark woven flow of change  
Under a vast and starless sky  
I saw the immortal moment lie  
One instant I, an instant, knew  
As God knows all. And it and you  
I, above Time, oh, blind! could see  
In witless immortality  
I saw the marble cup, the tea,  
Hung on the air, an amber stream,  
I saw the fire's unglittering gleam,  
The painted flame, the frozen smoke.  
No more the flooding lamplight broke

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

On flying eyes and lips and hair;  
But lay, but slept unbroken there,  
On stiller flesh, and body breathless,  
And lips and laughter stayed and deathless,  
And words on which no silence grew.  
Light was more alive than you. . . .

Dazed at length  
Human eyes grew, mortal strength  
Wearied; and Time began to creep  
Change glinted on the eyes I loved.  
The cup was filled. The bodies moved  
The drifting petal came to ground.  
The laughter chimed its perfect round.  
The broken syllable was ended . . .

Examples of flashes of higher consciousness provoked by anaesthetics might be multiplied indefinitely. Two more are chosen, one occurring in a quite illiterate man, and the other in a great public figure. The first was a patient, who was heard to shout in the public ward of the hospital, while coming round from an anaesthetic:

'You don't understand, you don't understand. No one understands. The Universe the universe I know—I know! Happiness is within you; I know, I know. You don't have to look outside, it's within you. The Universe, the universe. . . .'

The nurse in charge went up to his bed to quieten him, saying:

'Here, stop that. You're making more noise than anyone else. You and your old universe!'

The vision was broken.

In the spring of 1932, the present Prime Minister, Mr. Winston Churchill, had an accident in the streets of New York, which necessitated an anesthetic and a minor operation. Afterwards, he contributed two articles to the *Daily Mail*, describing his sensations when coming round from the anaesthetic. The following is an extract from his description

The sanctum is occupied by alien powers. I see the absolute truth and explanation of things, but something is left out which

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

upsets the whole, so by a larger sweep of the mind I have to see a greater truth and a more complete explanation, which comprises the erring element. Nevertheless, there is still something left out. So we have to take a still wider sweep . . . The process continues inexorably. Depth beyond depth of unendurable truth opens.

Dr. Bucke's experience had such a lasting effect upon him that he devoted his life afterwards to the study of what he called Cosmic Consciousness, collecting and correlating other descriptions of it in literature and from living men. He also evolved a theory on the subject of cosmic consciousness, regarding its sporadic manifestation in a few individuals as a sign that it would eventually be manifested in the whole of mankind. In other words, he tried to fit cosmic consciousness into the framework of the evolutionary theory.

His line of reasoning was as follows. The lowest rung in the ladder of consciousness is the acquisition and registration of sense-impressions, that is to say, of percepts. This is the rung on which the lower animals stand, and it is from this that the psychic life of man has evolved. The continuous registration of sense-impressions — percepts — in time led to a further increase in the number of cells in the central sense ganglia, allowing of a number of percepts being combined into a recept. If, for example, many percepts, say of a tree, are registered, eventually the brain becomes competent to combine them into a sort of compound percept, or recept, called a tree.

Now the work of accumulation begins again on a higher plane; the sensory organs keep steadily at work, manufacturing percepts; the receptual centres keep steadily at work, manufacturing more and yet more recepts from the old and new percepts; the capacity of the central ganglia is constantly taxed to do the necessary registration of percepts, the elaboration of these into recepts and the necessary registration of recepts. Then, as the ganglia, by use and selection, are improved, they constantly manufacture from percepts, and from the initial simple recepts, more and more complex, that is to say, higher and higher recepts. Eventually the third rung of the ladder is reached, when the higher recepts are replaced by concepts.

The relation of a concept to a recept is, as Dr. Bucke explains, somewhat similar to the relation of algebra to arithmetic. A recept is a com-

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

posite image of many hundreds of percepts; a concept is that same composite image ticketed and, as it were, dismissed. It is the algebraic sign that stands henceforth for the thing itself, that is, for the multiple receipts.

This ability to form concepts increases the efficiency of the brain enormously, as much as the introduction of machinery increases the capacity of the race to work, or as much as the use of algebra increases the power of the mind to make mathematical calculations. To replace a cumbersome receipt by a simple sign is almost like replacing actual goods, such as wheat, fabrics and hardware, by entries in a ledger. The ability to form concepts implies the possession of a language. It also implies the existence of some degree of self-consciousness. An animal does not possess self-consciousness because it cannot stand outside itself and see that it perceives, it is conscious only of the object that it sees. A man not only sees, but may be conscious that he sees. The faculties of language and of potential self-consciousness are the prerogatives of the human race, as is also the capacity to form concepts. It is on this rung of the ladder that we now stand. We are capable of a certain degree of self-consciousness, and of communicating with each other by language, and we are able to form concepts.

There is every reason to suppose that if there are rungs in the ladder of consciousness below us, there are also rungs above us. But in addition to the *a priori* grounds for believing this, we have the additional testimony of people who have actually stood on a higher rung, amongst others, the rung of cosmic consciousness. Dr. Bucke explains this step in a similar manner to that in which he explained the previous step. The mind becomes overcrowded, as it were, with concepts, and these are constantly becoming larger, more numerous and more and more complex. Some day (the conditions being all favourable) the fusion, or what might be called the chemical union of several of them, and of certain moral elements in addition, takes place, the result is an intuition, and the establishment of the intuitional mind, in other words, of higher consciousness.

There exist certain ambiguities and undoubted errors in Dr. Bucke's theory of the evolution of cosmic consciousness. First of all, it is not clear whether he believes, or does not believe, that the blending of many

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

concepts with the appropriate emotions is likely to produce a phenomenon that contains entirely new features, non-existent in either the intellectual concepts, or in the emotions. The analogy is a good one if by chemical union, he means that as oxygen and hydrogen chemically united produce water, unlike either of the two elements out of which it is formed, so also through a special form of union of emotions and intellect an entirely new faculty is created. At one moment, we have a mixture of two gases in a bottle; an electric spark is passed through the mixture, and in a flash there is the new material, water. So also is it with cosmic consciousness. At one moment he who experiences it is conscious of nothing more unusual than perhaps a strong emotion, and then suddenly, and without warning, his whole state and his attitude to the world change. This new state lasts a short time and then, with equal abruptness, disappears. The transition would appear to be far more abrupt than the change, say, from sleep to wakefulness, or from wakefulness to sleep.

What is undoubtedly an error on Dr. Bucke's part is to suppose that the attainment of higher consciousness can possibly form part of an evolutionary process, and that the individuals who have experienced it can be looked upon as 'sports', that in time are to become so numerous that they will be the rule rather than the exception. There is little to suggest that man is undergoing psychic evolution, and nothing to suggest that higher states of consciousness are becoming commoner. If anything, the reverse would appear to be the case. The possession of the moral values that Dr. Bucke rightly supposes to be a requisite to the attainment of higher consciousness is not a distinguishing feature of modern civilized man. He prides himself more on his intellectual attainments, and on his conquest of the material world, rather than on his possession of moral values. The world of values is, indeed, at the present moment at a discount, and it is more difficult for a poet or a philosopher to exist in London or New York than it was for him to exist in ancient Athens. Progress is measured in terms of material and not of spiritual prosperity.

Moreover, quite apart from this question of moral values, it is apparent from an examination of literature, that higher consciousness seldom comes entirely accidentally. It is true that Dr. Bucke's experience

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

appears from the outside to have been accidental. He was driving home in a hansom, and suddenly without warning, the moment of illumination arrived. But much had gone before to explain why, of all the people driving home in hansoms, it was Dr. Bucke who had this unique experience. From childhood onwards he had dwelt on the subject of God and the meaning of life. At times, to quote his own words, 'he was subject to a sort of ecstasy of curiosity and hope'. Later, he describes his life as being for some years, 'one passionate note of interrogation, an unappeasable hunger for enlightenment on the basic problems'. Finally, as a preliminary to the drive home in the hansom, he had spent an evening with friends reading aloud the more emotional of the poets, especially Whitman — Whitman, a poet who had himself experienced flashes of another state.

A careful perusal of the descriptions of states of higher consciousness collected in Dr. Bucke's volume shows that in almost every case illumination was preceded by a long period of striving after truth. The great majority of the people whose experiences are included there, were solitary men and women who had lost all taste for the world, and had suffered much spiritually, and often physically. It is worthy of note that prior to illumination, both Christ and Buddha went through a period of temptation, associated with fasting in the wilderness. We are told that Mohammed also absented himself from society and sought the solitude of a cavern on Mount Hara, where in emulation of the Christian anchorites of the desert, he remained days and nights together engaged in prayer and meditation. It would therefore seem that an experience of higher consciousness rarely comes apart from previous effort and searching, and that it is generally preceded by great emotional suffering. There is no reason for believing that it forms part of an evolutionary process, even if such process were proved to exist.

In this chapter, higher states of consciousness are being discussed in their relation to psychology and philosophy. It is for this reason that emphasis has been laid on accounts furnished by intellectuals, such as William James and Dr. Bucke, rather than on descriptions of religious ecstasy. As a suitable sequel to the accounts already given, we will include the scholarly dissertation on higher levels of consciousness given by the philosopher Plotinus (A.D. 204). Of the various writings of

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Plotinus, that which is most pertinent to this subject is a letter written to a friend, Flaccus. After giving certain bad news concerning the decay of the Roman Empire and complaining that he was tired of this prison-house, the body, he states that he calmly awaits the day when the divine nature within him would be set free from matter. He then proceeds as follows:

You ask me to tell you how we know, and what is our criterion of certainty. To write is always irksome to me. But for the continual solicitations of Porphyry I should not have left a line to survive me. For your own sake and for your father's my reluctance shall be overcome.

External objects present us only with appearances. Concerning them, therefore, we may be said to possess opinion rather than knowledge. The distinctions in the actual world of appearance are of import only to ordinary and practical men. Our question lies with the ideal reality that exists behind appearance. How does the mind perceive these ideas? Are they without us, and is the reason, like sensation, occupied with objects external to itself? What certainty would we then have — what assurance that our perception was infallible? The object perceived would be something different from the mind perceiving it. We should have then an image instead of a reality. It would be monstrous to believe for a moment that the mind was unable to perceive ideal truth exactly as it is, and that we had not certainty and real knowledge concerning the world of intelligence. It follows, therefore, that this region of truth is not to be investigated as a thing external to us, and so only imperfectly known. It is within us. Here the objects we contemplate and that which contemplates are identical — both are thought. The subject cannot surely know an object different from itself. The world of ideas lies within our intelligence. Truth, therefore, is not the agreement of our apprehension of an external object with the object itself. It is the agreement of the mind with itself. Consciousness, therefore, is the whole basis of certainty. The mind is its own witness. Reason sees in itself that which is above itself as its source, and again, that which is below itself as still itself once more.

Knowledge has three degrees — opinion, science, illumination. The means or instrument of the first is sense; of the second

## HIGHER STATES OF CONSCIOUSNESS

dialectic, of the third, intuition. To the last I subordinate reason. It is absolute knowledge founded on the identity of the mind knowing with the object known. . . .

You ask how we can know the Infinite? I answer, not by reason. It is the office of reason to distinguish and define. The Infinite, therefore, cannot be ranked among its objects. You can only apprehend the Infinite by a faculty superior to reason, by entering into a state in which you are your finite self no longer — in which the divine essence is communicated to you. This is ecstasy (Cosmic Consciousness) It is the liberation of your mind from its finite consciousness. Like can only apprehend like; when you thus cease to be finite, you become one with the Infinite. In the reduction of your soul to its simplest self, its divine essence, you realize this union — this identity.

But this sublime condition is not of permanent duration. It is only now and then that we can enjoy this elevation (mercifully made possible for us) above the limits of the body and the world. I myself have realized it but three times as yet, and Porphyry hitherto not once. All that tends to purify and elevate the mind will assist you in this attainment, and facilitate the approach and the recurrence of these happy intervals. There are, then, different roads by which this end may be reached. The love of beauty which exalts the poet; that devotion to the One and that ascent of science which makes the ambition of the philosopher, and that love and those prayers by which some devout and ardent soul tends in its moral purity towards perfection. These are the great highways conducting to that height above the actual and the particular, where we stand in the immediate presence of the Infinite, who shines out as from the depths of the soul.

In these incomparable words, which might equally well have come from the lips of an Eastern sage, Plotinus sums up all that can usefully be said on this subject. Discursive thinking, however extended, can never lead to the apprehension of Reality. It is only during those states of consciousness in which man finds himself stripped of all finite conditions, including those of his intellect, that the veil is lifted.

## CHAPTER XII

### RELIGION

MOST scientific writers who have studied religion begin by attempting to define what is meant by that word. Many different definitions have been offered. It has been defined as 'what we do with our solitariness', (A. N. Whitehead), as 'the attitude which the individual takes up towards the determiner of his destinies', (Prof. J. Bissett Pratt), as 'the feelings, acts and experiences of individual men in their solitude, so far as they apprehend themselves to stand in relation to whatever they may consider the divine', (William James), and 'as the experience of human nature in the higher ranges of its activity', (J. Haynes Holmes). It is however doubtful whether such definitions are necessary or of very great value, for every man has his own conception of what he means by religion and what for him is a religious experience.

The majority of writers have asserted that religious sentiment is not only a natural and normal element, but a universal phenomenon of human life. Havelock Ellis, for instance, described it as 'a special function which is almost a physiological function'. And if we stretch the definition of religious sentiment wide enough so that it embraces all that is related to the world of value, this is true. There is nobody who does not possess some criterion of value, some ethical code of behaviour, to which he nominally subscribes, even though in practice he fails to live up to it. But only if the definition is so stretched as to include recognition of the whole world of values can the universality of a religious sentiment be maintained. In its narrower sense religious sentiment contains an element of wonder and veneration, and there are many men and women who would appear to have lost the capacity to wonder: 'What does it all mean?'; 'Why am I here, and what am I?' Like men who have grown accustomed to the beauty and mystery of a sunset, and, looking at it, merely think, 'the refraction of light by the earth's atmosphere', so they accept life as a stale phenomenon, a story that has been told so often that it has ceased to have any meaning.

## RELIGION

What nature could give us if only our senses and minds were less dulled is very beautifully told in the 'First Conversation' with Brother Lawrence, written down by M<sup>r</sup>. Beaufort, Grand Vicar to Cardinal de Noailles, Archbishop of Paris, and published by him in 1692.

The first time I saw Brother Lawrence was upon the third of August 1666. He told me that God had done him a singular favour, in his conversion at the age of eighteen.

That in the winter, seeing a tree stripped of its leaves, and considering that within a little time the leaves would be renewed, and after that the flowers and fruit appear, he received a high view of the Providence and the Power of God, which has never since been effaced from his soul. That this view had set him perfectly loose from the world, and kindled in him such a love for God, that he could not tell whether it had increased in above forty years that he had lived since.

Men and women who adapt themselves as best they can to existence, yet with no particular interest, no particular emotional feeling towards the universe, can scarcely be termed religious; for religion must always contain this element of wonder, thus striving after the unknown and reaching out towards the infinite.

Religious feeling not only contains this ingredient of wonder, but also, an instinctive desire to venerate or worship. The religious man attempts to discriminate between values that he believes to be ultimate and those that are only relative, between the pursuit of the infinite and the pursuit of the finite, between the spiritual and the material. He is searching for the real, the perfect and the permanent, and it is in the presence of these values that he is conscious of the desire to worship.

Every great religion can be analysed into three elements, a philosophy, a mythology and a ritual. The philosophy is the central core of the religion, the mythology and rituals its outer sheath. Sri Ramakrishna, the leader of the spiritual renaissance that was inaugurated in India during the second half of the last century, has aptly compared the central core and outer husk of a religion to a grain of rice.

Although in a grain of paddy, the germ is considered the only necessary thing [for germination and growth], while the husk and chaff are considered of no importance, still, if the husked

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

grain is put into the ground, it will not sprout up and grow into a plant and produce rice. To get a crop one must needs sow the grain with the husk on. But if one wants to get at the kernel itself, we must remove the husk of the grain. So, rites and ceremonies are necessary for the growth and perpetuation of a religion. They are the receptacles that contain the kernel of truth, and consequently, every man must perform them before he reaches the central truth.

What makes the development of ritual and mythology in religion necessary is that a religion is a synthesis of intellectual and emotional experiences. Whilst words are sufficient for the expression of the intellectual content of a religion, they are insufficient for the expression of its emotional aspect. Emotions can best be portrayed by the use of rituals, symbols and stories. Hence the importance of art, ceremonies and mythology to all religion. The Absolute can only be thought of, or stated, through the relative, and the various symbols and rituals of a religion are so many pegs on which to hang spiritual truths.

There is another feature that all the greater religions of the world possess in common. They are the result of revelation. Each has come down from some great religious genius, who has stood on a higher level than his fellows, and has by direct vision apprehended truth. The great religions are, therefore, the products of higher states of consciousness, and are invested with all the authority that comes from such an origin. They are not merely the products of the religious sentiment of an ordinary man, but are revelations coming from a higher level. We accept them as we accept a work of genius in the realm of art: some of the work we can understand, and the rest we can only accept in the expectation that with further study its value will be revealed. This is the true meaning of the word translated in the gospels as 'faith'. A better translation would be 'trust', a word that implies not a blind credulity, but the trustfulness that comes from having apprehended some of the message, but not all of it.

Most works devoted to the comparative study of religions are really studies of religious husks. Only a few deal with the grain. And the reason for this is at once obvious. It is only the husk that differs; the grain, the inner soul, of all great religions is the same. Divested of all

## RELIGION

special names, the fundamental abstractions of all the great world religions are identical, variations of the great eternal Religion, suited to different minds and different races.

Many devout Christians will be shocked by this suggestion, that in its essentials the religion in which they so firmly believe is identical with Buddhism and Sufism. They will point to the many differences that distinguish the Christian from the Buddhist, and to the even greater differences that separate Christ from Buddha. But the differences to which they point are differences in the less essential attributes of the two religions, not differences in its soul.

Thirty years ago the writer of this book was taken over the shrine of a Sufi saint in India by an old Mohammedan. After he had viewed all that was to be seen in the dimly lit building and was about to say good-bye, his aged guide turned to him and said, 'There is no difference between the great religions; a good Mohammedan is the same as a good Christian, and a good Christian as a good Buddhist. We also revere the name of your great prophet, Jesus Christ, and one of His sayings is written up over the doorway of the Taj Mahal.' Twenty years were to pass before the truth of the old Mohammedan's words was fully understood.

If it were not so, if each religion differed in its essentials, all would be suspect. There are not many truths, but one truth, although the language in which it is formulated will differ according to a man's type, his education and his level of understanding. There is only one religion, although the expression of it differs with the culture, temperament, education and understanding of its exponent. Differences of creed, differences in ritual, varieties of ceremonial are necessary in a world in which men differ so profoundly, and the greater the number of sects, the better the chance that any individual man will find that which is best suited to his own particular needs.

In case the reader should think that this is merely the expression of an opinion, based on a theoretical examination of religions, that is to say, on external rather than on inner evidence, reference will be made to the life of Sri Ramakrishna. This great teacher, after he had gained for himself an India-wide reputation for holiness, and after he had become proficient in all yoga practices, was initiated into the religion of Islam.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

He lived outside the precincts of a mosque and dressed, fed, prayed, and behaved generally like any other Mussulman. All thoughts, visions and ecstasies associated with Hindu gods and goddesses left him for the time being, and his tranquil mind became the mirror from which Islamic thoughts and images were reflected. By his earnestness and devotion he soon obtained from his new religion all that he had previously derived from Hinduism and yoga. Eight years later he was seized with a desire to see where the path of Christianity would lead him. He devoted himself with equal single-mindedness to the study of the New Testament, and eventually reached the conviction that Christ was an Incarnation of God, 'the Master Yogi, the Embodiment of Love'. This conviction remained with him to the day of his death.

As a result of his own personal experience of the four great religions — for in studying yoga he had also studied Buddhism — he made the following declaration

I have practised all religions, Hinduism, Islam, Christianity, and I have also followed the paths of the different Hindu sects . . . I have found that it is the same God towards Whom all are directing their steps, though along different paths . . . Wherever I look, I see men quarrelling in the name of religion, the Hindus, Mohammedans, Brahmos, Vaishnavas and the rest, but they never reflect that He Who is called Krishna is also called Siva, and bears the name of Primitive Energy (*Sakti*), Jesus and Allah as well, — the same Rama, with a thousand names. The tank has several *ghats*. At one, Hindus draw water in pitchers, and call it *jala*, at another Mussulmen draw water in leathern bottles, and call it *pani*; at a third Christians do the same, and call it water. Can we imagine that the water is not *jala*, but only *pani*, or water? How ridiculous! The substance is one under different names, and everyone is seeking the same substance; nothing but climate, temperament and names vary. Let each man follow his own path. If he sincerely and ardently wishes to know God, peace be unto him. He will surely realize Him.

At a later date, Ramakrishna's disciple, Vivekananda, the dynamic apostle of the religious revival in India and in America, re-echoed the views of his master.

## RELIGION

The aim of religion is to get rid of nature's control over us. That is the goal of all religions. Each soul is potentially divine. The goal is to manifest this divinity within by controlling nature, external and internal. Do this either by work (karma-yoga), worship (bhakti-yoga), or psychic control (raja-yoga), or philosophy (jnana-yoga), by one or other or all of these, and be free. This is the whole of religion. Doctrines or dogmas, or rituals or books, or temples or forms, are but secondary details. I accept all religions that were in the past and worship them all. I worship God with every one of them, in whatever form they worship Him. I shall go to the mosque of a Mohammedan, I shall enter the Christian church and kneel before the crucifix; I shall visit the Buddhist temple, where I shall take refuge in Buddha and His law. I shall go into the forest and sit down in meditation with the Hindu, who is trying to find the light which enlightens the heart of everyone. The Bible, the Vedas, the Koran and all the sacred books are so many pages, and an infinite number of pages remain yet to be unfolded. I would leave my heart open to them all.

The same idea, that although there are many labels for religion there is only one religion, is the theme of a story in the *Mathnawi*. Four friends, a Persian, an Arab, a Turk and a Greek, found a coin, and quarrelled over the fruit that they would purchase with it. The Persian wanted *angur*, the Arab *unab*, the Turk *uzum*, and the Greek *astafeel*. Each went into raptures over the quality of the fruit he wished his friends to taste. A wise man passing by happened to hear them quarrelling, and learnt from them the cause of their disagreement. Asking for the coin he went to the neighbouring village, and bought a bunch of grapes, the one fruit for which all had asked, each in his own language.

It was pointed out that a new religion starts with a revelation of truth through the agency of higher consciousness. Just as an ordinary man who has experienced higher states of consciousness uses the material with which he happens to be familiar in order to interpret to others what he has seen, so do the great religious teachers utilize for the purpose of exposition the culture of the country in which they happen to have been born. Christ preaching to the Jews, a patriarchal race, referred to God as 'Our Heavenly Father', for the word 'father' meant much to his hearers. He accepted the laws of His country, but gave to them a new

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

meaning, teaching that what was important was not so much the outward observance of the law but the inner attitude of the heart.

Ye have heard that it was said of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery; but I say unto you that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart (Matt. v. 27).

Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth, but I say unto you that ye resist not evil; but whosoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other also. (Matt. v. 38).

Like all orthodox Jews Christ went to Jerusalem, in order that he might celebrate the Jewish feast of the Passover, and then made use of the unleavened bread as a symbol for a new message to his disciples.

So also do we find Buddha using Hindu mythology and Hindu culture as a means of illustrating his own teaching, giving to old rules and old practices new meaning and life. Occasionally religious teachers utilize symbols and word-pictures that are not generally connected with religious ideas. The Sufi teachers, for example, employ the symbolism of earthly love in order to illustrate what is meant by the love of God. The mystical poems of Persia, such as those of the *Mathnawi*, are full of allusions to human lovers because, as one of their own poets has said, 'Nobody can write in heavenly language and be understood'. Nor could the Mohammedans see anything incongruous in illustrating religious fervour by comparing it with the passion of the lover for his beloved. Human love may be the stepping-stone to the understanding of a greater love that embraces the whole of humanity, and thence it is but one step more to the understanding of the love of God. As Max Muller has put it:

The idea of Sufism is a loving union of the soul with God. The sufi holds that there is nothing in human language that can express the love between the soul and God so well as the love between a man and woman, and that if he is to speak of the union between the two at all, he can only do so in the symbolic language of earthly love.

The Sufi, therefore, uses the theme of the Song of Songs in order to illustrate his truths.

## RELIGION

Unfortunately, humanity is more disposed to dwell on the differences in the outward trappings and expression of religion than on the identity of the inner truths. With the passage of time the inner meaning of the symbol is lost and only the symbol remains; the ceremony is retained, but its significance forgotten. All religions are liable to this process of decay from within outwards, some suffering it more swiftly than others. It would seem, indeed, as though some religions from the very beginning started without any inner vitality. Confucianism may be taken as an example of such a religion. Confucius, himself, was apparently an honest man. He made no claim to having had any divine revelation, and regarded himself as being a reformer and a reviver of old knowledge, rather than a creator of anything new. He was interested in antiquity and earnest in seeking out knowledge from old books. That was all.

In spite of this, his disciples, and we are told that there were three thousand of them, regarded him with all the veneration that is shown to great religious leaders. Those who had immediate access to him, stood, or sat near him, watching the minutest details of his conduct. From one of these disciples we learn that he never shot at a bird that was perching, or fished with a net. We are also told exactly how he conducted himself in court, and amongst villagers; how he ate his food, lay in bed, and sat in his carriage, how he rose up in the presence of older men and of those in mourning, and how his countenance changed when he was angry, and when he saw a great display of viands on the table. He was a master of all that was correct in manners, a supreme authority on deportment and ceremony.

Existing side by side in China with Confucianism was a religion of an entirely different character, Taoism. Only in China could two religions so divergent in outlook and so different in method have lived together amicably. Whereas Confucianism concerned itself with every item in a man's behaviour, the Taoist paid attention only to the inner attitude of the heart and mind. The two teachings held scarcely anything in common, but seemed to have tolerated each other, however critical they may have been of each other's points of view.

There are people [wrote Han Fei Tzu, to the king of Ch'm] who walk apart from the crowd, priding themselves on being different

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

from other men. They preach the doctrine of quietism but their exposition of it is couched in baffling and mysterious terms. I submit to your majesty that this quietness is of no practical value to anyone, and that the language in which it is couched is not founded on any real principle . . . I submit that man's duty in life is to serve his prince and nourish his parents, neither of which things can be done by quietness. I further submit that it is man's duty in all that he teaches to promote loyalty and good faith, and the legal constitution. This cannot be done in terms that are vague and mysterious. The doctrine of the quietists is a false one likely to lead people astray

Han Fei Tzu, like many since his time, judged the value of the religion by the material benefits that accrued from it, and certainly when assessed by such a method, Taoism would be found woefully deficient. It was a religion of inaction, of humility and of acceptance, acceptance amongst other things of King Ch'in, and of the legal constitution on which Han Fei Tzu set such store. But the writer was certainly justified in his complaint that the exposition of the Taoists was baffling and mysterious. None of the mystical religions of the East have ever placed any reliance on the written word, and have always handed on their teachings by word of mouth. The Taoists went even further. Not only did they consider books on the Tao useless, but since words themselves express only such things as belong to ordinary states of consciousness, they were deemed to be irrelevant to the transcendental knowledge of the Tao

Do not seek precision [wrote Chuang Tzu when referring to Tao] I myself have traversed it this way and that; yet still know only where it begins. I have roamed at will through its stupendous spaces. I know how to get to them, but I do not know where they end

When the Taoist spoke of his experiences, he spoke only to arouse interest in them, and not with any idea of describing them. It is with good reason, therefore, that the Tao is often called the wordless doctrine.

The Tao that can be trodden is not the enduring and unchanging Tao.

## RELIGION

The Name that can be named is not the enduring and unchanging Name.

Conceived of as having no name, it is the Originator of Heaven and Earth;

Conceived of as having a name (Teh), it is the Mother of all things.

Always without desire it must be found,

If its deep mystery we would sound.

But if desire always within us be,

Its outer fringe is all that we shall see.

Under these two aspects, it is really the same, but as development takes place, it receives the different names. Together we call them the Mystery. Where the Mystery is the deepest, is the gate of all that is subtle and wonderful. (*Tao Teh King*. MAX MÜLLER.)

As in all other mystical religions, he who would understand the Tao must himself partake of its nature, and as a first step, he must free himself of all personal reactions and desires. The same idea is expressed in St. John's gospel. 'He that loveth not God, knoweth not God; for God is Love' The Tao that cannot be named is the infinite, the Tao with the name, Teh, is the infinite in operation, the Mother and Creator of all things. The parallel between this and the Brahman, and the creative power of the Brahman manifested in Mâyâ, should be noted.

The *Tao Teh King* is reputed to have been written by Lao Tze. The story of its authorship is as follows. Lao Tze, disgusted with the decadence of the times, decided to withdraw from the world, and with this in mind proceeded towards the pass leading from China to the West. On his journey, he was recognized by Yin Hsi, himself a well-known Taoist, who insisted that Lao Tze, before going into seclusion, should leave behind some written record. To this Lao Tze eventually agreed, and wrote the *Tao Teh King*. Many sinologists, amongst others Arthur Giles, throw much doubt on this story of the authorship of the *Tao Teh King*.

In order to give some indication of the nature of Taoism, the following extracts from this so-called work of Lao Tze are appended.

The highest excellence is like [that of] water. The excellence or

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

water appears in its benefiting all things, and in its occupying, without striving [to the contrary], the low place which all men dislike. Hence [its way] is near to [that of] the Tao.

It should be noted that water is held up to the Taoist as a model because its nature is always to seek the lowest place. This is a very common image in Taoist sayings.

When gold and jade fill the hall, their possessor cannot keep them safe. When wealth and honours lead to arrogance, this brings its evil on itself. When the work is done, and one's name is becoming distinguished, to withdraw into obscurity is the way of Heaven.

Who can [make] the muddy water [clear]? Let it be still, and it will gradually become clear. Who can secure the condition of rest? Let movement go on, and the condition of rest will gradually arise.

Therefore the sage holds in his embrace the one thing [of humility], and manifests it to all the world. He is free from self-display, and therefore he shines; from self-assertion, and therefore he is distinguished; from self-boasting, and therefore his merit is acknowledged; from self-complacency, and therefore he acquires superiority. It is because he is thus free from striving that therefore no-one in the world is able to strive with him.

He who stands on his tiptoes does not stand firm; he who stretches his legs does not walk [easily]. [So], he who displays himself does not shine, he who asserts his own views is not distinguished; he who vaunts himself does not find his merit acknowledged; he who is self-conceited has no superiority allowed to him. Such conditions, viewed from the standpoint of the Tao, are like remnants of food, or a tumour on the body, which all dislike. Hence those who pursue [the course] of the Tao do not adopt and allow them.

Man takes his law from the Earth; the Earth takes its law from Heaven; Heaven takes its law from the Tao. The law of the Tao is its being what it is.

The Tao produced One; One produced Two; Two produced Three; Three produced all things. All things leave behind them the Obscurity [out of which they have come], and go forward to

## RELIGION

embrace the Brightness [into which they have emerged], while they are harmonized by the Breath of Vacancy.

It should be noted that the Taoist saying 'three produced all things' is in conformity with the view of the Samkya philosopher that all phenomena are the result of the interaction of the three gunas. (See Chapter IX.)

He who knows other men is discerning; he who knows himself is intelligent. He who overcomes others is strong, he who overcomes himself is mighty. He who is satisfied with his lot is rich; he who goes on acting with energy has a [firm] will.

He who does not fail in the requirements of his position, continues long; he who dies and yet does not perish, has longevity.

The Tao in its regular course does nothing [for the sake of doing it], and so there is nothing which it does not do.

If princes and kings were able to maintain it, all things would of themselves be transformed by them.

If this transformation became to me an object of desire, I would express the desire by the nameless simplicity.

Scholars of the highest class, when they hear about the Tao, earnestly carry it into practice. Scholars of the middle class, when they have heard about it, seem now to keep it and now to lose it. Scholars of the lowest class, when they have heard about it, laugh greatly at it. If it were not [thus] laughed at, it would not be fit to be the Tao.

The softest thing in the world dashes against and overcomes the hardest; that which has no [substantial] existence enters where there is no crevice. I know hereby what advantage belongs to doing nothing [with a purpose].

When the Tao prevails in the world, they send back their swift horses to [draw] the dung-carts. When the Tao is disregarded in the world, the war-horses breed in the border lands.

There is no guilt greater than to sanction ambition; no calamity greater than to be discontented with one's lot; no fault greater than the wish to be getting. Therefore the sufficiency of contentment is an enduring and unchanging sufficiency.

If I were suddenly to become known, and put into a position to conduct a government according to the great Tao, what I should be most afraid of would be a boastful display.

He who has in himself abundantly the attributes of a Tao is like

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

an infant. Poisonous insects will not sting him; fierce beasts will not seize him, birds of prey will not strike him.

He who knows the Tao, does not care to speak about it; he who is ever ready to speak about it, does not know it.

Sincere words are not fine; fine words are not sincere. Those who are skilled in the Tao do not dispute about it; the disputatious are not skilled in it. Those who know the Tao are not extensively learned; the extensively learned do not know it.

The sage does not accumulate for himself. The more that he expends for others, the more does he possess of his own; the more that he gives to others, the more does he have to himself (MAX MÜLLER'S translation.)

The thesis of the Taoist is similar to that of the Vedântist. To know reality, a higher state of consciousness must be reached, a state that is only attainable if personal desires, preconceptions and fantasies are laid aside. Hence Lao Tze's attack on that much-vaunted and highly prized entity of modern life, what is known as individuality or personality. Our personal idiosyncrasies only allow us to see that which is purely subjective, limited and in conformity with its views. Personality must therefore be rendered passive, and that state of consciousness reached where that which is perceived becomes one with that which perceives. 'Never to have known that whereby we know is to cast away a treasure that is ours.' (Lu Shih Ch'un Ch'in, quoted by Arthur Waley, in *The Way and Its Power*.) But on this higher level of thought, the language which was created to meet the demands of lower levels is unable to express what has been seen. 'The name that can be named is not the enduring and unchanging name.'

Obviously there could be no mutual understanding between the followers of Confucius and of Lao Tze, and for this very reason we are fortunate in possessing a description of a meeting between the two leaders from the brush of that inimitable sage Chuang Tzu. Lao Tze was fifty years older than Confucius, who always referred to him as the Old Philosopher. Chuang Tzu gives the following description of their meeting:

Confucius had lived to the age of fifty-one without hearing Tao, when he went south to Pe'i, to see Lao Tze

## RELIGION

Lao Tze said, 'So you have come, sir, have you? I hear you are considered a wise man up north. Have you got Tao?'

'Not yet,' answered Confucius.

'In what direction,' asked Lao Tze, 'have you sought for it?'

'I sought it for five years,' replied Confucius, 'in the science of numbers, but did not succeed.'

'And then' . . . continued Lao Tze.

'Then,' said Confucius, 'I spent twelve years seeking for it in the doctrine of the Yin and Yang, also without success.'

'Just so,' rejoined Lao Tze 'Were Tao something which could be presented, there is no man but would present it to his sovereign, or to his parents. Could it be imparted or given, there is no man but would impart it to his brother or give it to his child. But this is impossible, for the following reason. Unless there is a suitable endowment within, Tao will not abide. Unless there is outward correctness, Tao will not operate. The external being unfitted for the impression of the internal, the true sage does not seek to imprint. The internal being unfitted for the reception of the external, the true sage does not seek to receive

'Reputation is public property, you may not appropriate it in excess. Charity and duty to one's neighbour are as caravanserais established by wise rulers of old; you may stop there one night, but not for long, or you will incur reproach.

'The perfect men of old took their road through charity, stopping a night with duty to their neighbour, on their way to ramble in transcendental space. Feeding on the produce of non-cultivation, and establishing themselves in the domain of no obligations, they enjoyed their transcendental inaction. Their food was ready to hand, and being under no obligations to others, they did not put any one under obligation to themselves. The ancients called this the outward visible sign of an inward and spiritual grace.

'Those who make wealth their all in all, cannot bear loss of money. Those who make distinction their all in all, cannot bear loss of fame. Those who affect power will not place authority in the hands of others. Anxious while holding, distressed if losing, yet never taking warning from the past and seeing the folly of their pursuit, — such men are the accursed of God

'Resentment, gratitude, taking, giving, censure of self, instruction of others, power of life and death, — these eight are the instru-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

ments of right; but only he who can adapt himself to the vicissitudes of fortune, without being carried away, is fit to use them. Such a one is an upright man among the upright. And he whose heart is not so constituted, — the door of divine intelligence is not yet opened for him.'

Confucius spoke of charity and duty to one's neighbour, and Lao Tze answered as follows:

'The chaff from winnowing will blind a man's eyes so that he cannot tell the points of the compass Mosquitoes will keep a man awake all night with their biting. And just in the same way this talk of charity and duty to one's neighbour drives me nearly crazy. Sir! Strive to keep the world to its own original simplicity. And as the wind bloweth where it listeth, so let virtue establish itself. Wherefor such undue energy, as though searching for a fugitive with a big drum'

'The snow-goose is white without a daily bath. The raven is black without daily colouring itself. The original simplicity of black and of white is beyond the reach of argument When the pond dries up and the fishes are left upon dry ground, to moisten them with the breath or to damp them with a little spittle is not to be compared with leaving them in the first instance in their native rivers and lakes'

On returning from a visit to Lao Tze, Confucius did not speak for three days A disciple asked him, saying, 'Master, when you saw Lao Tze, in what direction did you admonish him?'

'I saw a dragon,' replied Confucius, 'a dragon which by convergence showed a body, by radiation became colour, and riding upon the clouds of heaven, nourished the two principles of creation My mouth was agape I could not shut it How then do you think I was going to admonish Lao Tze?' (*The Bible of the World*).

There exists in Chinese literature an alternative rendering of Lao Tze's reply to Confucius. It is found in the *Shih Chi*, or 'Historical Records' of Ssu-ma Ch'ien, which was written in the second century before Christ.

Confucius journeyed to the land of Chou to make inquiry of Lao Tze concerning ceremonies, Lao Tze made reply: 'The men about whom you talk are dead, and their bones are moldered to dust: Only their words are left Moreover, when the superior man

## RELIGION

gets his opportunity, he mounts aloft; but when the time is against him, he is carried along by the force of circumstances. I have heard that a good merchant, though he have treasures safely stored, appears as if he were poor; and that the superior man, though his virtue be complete, is yet, to outward seeming, stupid. Put away your proud air and many desires, your insinuating habit and wild will. They are of no advantage to you. This is all I have to tell you.

Confucius's comments upon this meeting to his disciples are given by the same authority as follows:

I know how birds can fly, fishes swim and the animals run. But the runner may be snared, the swimmer hooked and the flyer shot by the arrow. But there is the dragon — I cannot tell how he mounts on the wind through the clouds, and rises to heaven. To-day I have seen Lao Tze, and can only compare him to the dragon. [The dragon is the Chinese symbol for greatness ]

Taoism and Confucianism have been discussed because they provide excellent examples of two different types of religion, the one mainly concerned with the inner state and the other with external behaviour. They cater for two classes of humanity, Confucianism supplying the needs of men who would have found Taoism too mystical and too contemplative, and who sought expression for their religious feelings in leading an active upright life in conformity with certain well-defined and easily understood values. In Lao Tze's words, the followers of Confucius travelled along the road of charity, but instead of 'stopping a night with duty to their neighbours on their way to ramble in transcendental space', they remained in the caravanserais indefinitely. 'Confucianism' is the favoured religion of the West, taking the form of an unostentatious and charitable Christianity. It is the religion of the decent conscientious Englishman and American with a strict code of honour, a feeling for the oppressed, and a respect for the ancient traditions of their countries. It is the religion taught in innumerable churches, in the universities and public schools and in Scout Rallies, the religion of service. That it survives in a world that seems to be losing all spiritual values is a fact for which it is impossible

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

to be too thankful. It is not for all to ramble with the Taoist in transcendental space. Krishna in the *Bhagavad Gita* says:

I have already declared that in this world there is a twofold path — that of the Sankyas by devotion in the shape of true knowledge; and that of the Yogins by devotion in the shape of action.

Active Christianity has a kinship with Karma-Yoga, the Yoga of Right Action. Krishna discusses with Arjuna inaction, wrong action, and right action, describing the last named as duty performed without attachment to the fruits of action. 'He who is possessed of devotion, abandoning the fruits of actions attains the highest tranquillity.' Christ and Buddha also taught that only good works performed free from personal aim could achieve transcendental results.

Confucianism and Taoism catered for two different types of humanity in ancient China, the active and the contemplative, types that generally find great difficulty in understanding each other. Especially difficult was it for the Confucianist to understand the Taoist, for, as the latter confessed, he had no words in which to express the truths that had come to him on higher levels of thought.

## CHAPTER XII

### BUDDHISM

In the previous chapter emphasis was laid on the unity of all religious truths; it was pointed out that only in its outward trappings and methods of exposition does one religion differ from another. In this and in the following chapter two of the greatest religions in the world's history, Christianity and Buddhism, will be compared and contrasted. Before dealing with the tenets of these religions it will be advisable to indicate certain differences in their respective attitudes to doctrine.

Although Buddhism, like Christianity, has an enormous literature, all the works that it contains are really nothing more than gigantic commentaries on a few comparatively simple directions given by Buddha to his disciples. They are not regarded as infallible writings to be accepted on the grounds that they are authoritative. The initiate into Buddhism approaches the religion in exactly the same way as a scientist approaches a scientific problem to be solved by experimental means. A few preliminary instructions are given by one who is older, and more experienced than himself, and it then remains for him to put the matter to the test. No form of faith is demanded of him other than faith in the possibility that by careful experimentation he will succeed in discovering the truth. Only by the results that he obtains from his experiments will he know whether what he has been told beforehand is true or not.

Primitive Christianity in the first century after Christ took up a somewhat similar attitude to the discovery of truth. Knowledge was obtained by direct experience and an intellectual assent was not demanded of the initiate. Church councils had not yet formulated doctrines that priests were pledged to teach, and members of the Church compelled to accept under pain of excommunication. Intellectual assent meant nothing; experience meant everything. But whereas

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Christianity after the expulsion of the Gnostic heresy, and even before it, departed from this attitude, Buddhism has maintained it.

Disciples are discouraged from speaking of that which they have not yet experienced.

For a religious devotee to preach the doctrine to the multitude before having realized it to be true, instead of meditating upon it (and testing its truth) in solitude, is a grievous mistake. (*Precepts to Gurus*, translated from the Tibetan by Evans-Wentz.)

What is regarded by some people as being the essential difference between Buddhism and Christianity is that, in the former, there is no idea of a personal God. For this reason Buddhism has sometimes been called a philosophy, rather than a religion. That the Buddhist does not describe the universal spirit that underlies all creation in terms of personality is true, for personality inevitably implies some degree of limitation. Only too often the personal deity is invested with the attributes required by the worshipper, being the God of the Chosen People, the God of Battles, the Great Physician, or the Almsgiver according to the needs of the moment. The Infinite is unspecifiable and both the Hindu and the Buddhist define the unknowable only in negative terms of 'not that'. Moreover, Buddhism refuses all dualistic conceptions, the Creator and the Created, God and man, the Worshipped and the worshipper. As Guénon has phrased it:

In reality, Buddhism is no more atheistical than it is theistic or pantheistic, all that need be said is that it does not place itself at the point of view where these various terms have any meaning.

In any case, the Buddhist acknowledges a hierarchy of higher beings, the hierarchy of the Buddhas. So long as there exist beings so high above him, the Buddhist feels no need for the existence of a Personal Deity, whose attributes are, in any case, utterly beyond his powers of comprehension.

Other differences between the two religions result from variations in their underlying philosophy. Both religions recognize the existence of cause and effect, and that what a man sows, that also shall he reap, but the Buddhist belief in reincarnation provides a long series of lives

## BUDDHISM

in which the reaping and sowing will take place. Whether the Christian doctrine of the forgiveness of sins and the Buddhist doctrine of *Karma* are reconcilable or not depends on the meaning we give to the word forgiveness. If it be taken to mean the non-rising of an inevitable effect from a previous cause, or the arbitrary wiping out of that effect after it has been produced, then, of course, the two ideas are irreconcilable. But forgiveness can never mean this, for should I kill a man, that man remains dead whether I be forgiven or not. Forgiveness does not entail the complete elimination of the results of an action. The effect of the sin on my character is all that can be affected by forgiveness, and this entails first that my action should be recognized as a sin, then repented of, and finally made the occasion for a decision that the offence will not be repeated. It is the continuation of the feeling of guilt and the effect that this will have on my character that are remitted, not the external consequences of my act. There exists therefore no unbridgable gulf between the Christian idea of forgiveness and the Buddhist view of karma.

Because the Buddhist believes that errors committed in one life are atoned for by suffering in another, any idea of a hell is inconceivable to him. However long a man may suffer in future incarnations for what he has done in this life, eventually, even if aeons have to pass, the Round of the Wheel will take an upward turn. So also is the idea of a heaven, where the enlightened ones remain in bliss and forgetfulness of the suffering of their fellow-creatures on earth is inconceivable to him. Compassion is for the Buddhist what Love (sometimes translated as Charity) is for the Christian. It is the first-fruit of knowledge, for no man can witness the useless suffering of his fellow-creatures without being filled with compassion. The Buddhist rejects the idea that any being is unalterably evil, and, more fortunate than Origen, who was punished by his fellow-Christians for maintaining that in the end the Devil would be saved, he can show compassion for all creatures that are alive. And because of this pity the Buddhas, the Enlightened Ones, who have gained liberation from the wheel of existence, of their own free will, return to earth to help their suffering fellows.

Go on, with hearts overflowing with compassion; in the world that is rent by suffering, be instructors, and wherever the darkness

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

of ignorance may happen to reign, kindle there a torch. (Buddhist writing.)

I seek no reward, not even to be reborn in the celestial worlds, but I seek to bring back those who have gone astray, to enlighten those who live in the darkness of error, to banish from the world all sorrow and all suffering (Sayings from two Chinese sages.)

It was from this very point, namely the universal existence of suffering, that Buddha started in his search for enlightenment. Here was a fact, the acceptance of which called for no act of faith. Suffering was a disease that affected the whole of mankind. When a patient is sick, it is necessary first, to discover the cause of the illness, and then to apply a remedy if any remedy be available. These were the two questions for which Buddha sought answers.

The answer that he eventually found to the first question, as to the cause of the sickness, was 'ignorance'. Man suffered because he remained in ignorance of the real nature of things and especially of his own relationship to the Universe. Ignorance is to Buddhism what original sin is to Christianity, and by ignorance is meant not only lack of knowledge, but what is of still greater importance, the existence of wrong ideas. It is nescience rather than ignorance that is the cause of man's suffering, and before knowledge can be given it is necessary first to get rid of that which is false. Wrong ideas must be eliminated before true ideas can find a place.

The means by which spiritual knowledge can be attained was called by Buddha the Eightfold Path to Deliverance. By deliverance is meant not only deliverance from suffering, but also from the wheel of the *Saṃsāra*, that is to say, from the repetition of birth, death and rebirth into the phenomenal world. When ignorance has ceased, desires born of that ignorance no longer arise. The absence of desire in turn leads to the cessation of useless activity and this deprives the wheel of existence of its motive power, so that it no longer turns.

Action is no longer needed when once the harmony of knowledge has been achieved. In real knowledge there can be no action, because there is nothing to change or improve. Change and imperfection go hand in hand. Once Enlightenment has been attained the wheel of change stops, and stability begins, in which there is

## BUDDHISM

no action and no rebirth or death. Action breeds action for ever.  
Enlightenment breeds enlightenment for ever. (MARCO PALLIS.)

The quintessence of the Buddhist doctrine is embodied in the Four Truths which may be tabulated as follows:

- |                                            |   |                                      |
|--------------------------------------------|---|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Suffering                               | } | together constituting the diagnosis. |
| 2. Cause of Suffering                      |   |                                      |
| 3. Cessation of Suffering                  | } | together constituting the cure.      |
| 4. Way leading to a Cessation of Suffering |   |                                      |

The way to the cessation of suffering is known as the Eightfold Path. Buddha states that for deliverance, eight requirements are necessary. These requirements fall naturally into three groups that may be described under the three terms wisdom, morality and concentration of mind. The eight requirements for the elimination of suffering and the attainment of knowledge were according to Buddha as follows:

- |                              |   |                        |
|------------------------------|---|------------------------|
| Right views                  | } | Wisdom                 |
| Right resolve                |   |                        |
| Right speech                 |   |                        |
| Right action                 | } | Morality               |
| Right means of livelihood    |   |                        |
| Right effort                 | } | Concentration of Mind. |
| Right attention or awareness |   |                        |
| Right meditation             |   |                        |

The possession of right views is the first essential, without which nothing can follow. Naturally, Buddhists believe to be right those views that find expression in the teaching of Buddha. It is not necessary, however, that these should be accepted blindly, but only that they should be examined and pondered over. All that the disciple is urged to do is to examine the foundation of his own beliefs and to reflect where these beliefs lead, and then to examine impartially those enunciated by Buddha.

Although the acquirement of right views comes at the commencement of the Eightfold Path, it is also the final goal. The object of him who follows this path is to reach right and perfect knowledge, so that he may be liberated from the illusory and painful round of the Sangsāra.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Right views are therefore the Alpha and Omega of the whole of Buddhist teaching. Whilst the intellect suffices for the earlier steps along the path, alone it is insufficient for the attainment of higher knowledge. Much, therefore, of the disciple's work is directed to the removal of the hindrances that prevent him from reaching that state in which truth may be apprehended.

The preliminary formulation of right views is naturally followed by a determination to make progress along the path to enlightenment. This is the second requirement, right resolve, and it is Buddha's formulation of Christ's admonition that he who has set his hand to the plough must not look back. The four requirements, right speech, right action, right means of livelihood and right effort, all constitute the ethics of Buddhism. It is obvious that in a religion that teaches a man to look upon every living creature as his fellow, some means of livelihood must be ruled out. No Buddhist could earn his living as a butcher, trafficker in drugs, or as a soldier. An intellectual assent to a doctrine is insufficient, for a truth must be lived in order to be understood.

The four branches of the path concerned with conduct may, therefore, be regarded as being both a result and a cause of attaining right views. As the disciple learns to define more and more accurately his relationship to his neighbour and the whole world, so is his conduct inevitably drawn more and more into line with those views. His beliefs help his conduct, his conduct his beliefs.

The penultimate requirements are perfect attention and awareness, practice in which is essential for the final requirement, right meditation. These, like right views, are really necessary from start to finish, for if thought and actions are to be of value, they must be made responsible and deliberate. They must cease to be blind reactions, even if they happen to be good reactions, and become thoughts and activities that are deliberately dedicated to the purposes of enlightenment. From the very beginning it must be the disciple's aim to remove as much of his life as possible from the power of accidental influences and to bring it into line with his resolve. A nature which is entirely swayed by the emotions (even when those emotions are good) is like a weathercock, blown this way and that way by the breath of every impulse. It is with the aim of increasing control that some Buddhist teachers prescribe for

## BUDDHISM

their disciple certain physical exercises that bring under the will movements that are normally made quite mechanically.

The converse method employed in Europe and America, namely that of making activities even more automatic than they already are by the use of slogans, press propaganda, drilling and marching in step, would be looked upon with little favour by Buddhists. A man, they would say, is already sufficiently automatic without the use of additional methods to make him more so. The aim of the Buddhist is the reverse, namely to make a man more aware of his activities so that he may ultimately be able to control them. The disciple is therefore told to direct his attention to all his movements, thoughts, sensations and feelings, so as to become more aware of them. Madame David-Neel, who has made a lifelong study of Buddhism, and from whom I have borrowed freely in this chapter, describes this part of a disciple's training as follows:

Nothing of what goes on in us should escape us. Neither should we miss anything which happens around us, or within the range of our senses. The Buddhist scriptures tell us that one must be conscious that one gets up when one gets up, that one sits down when one sits down, and so on with all movements. We should be conscious of the feelings which arise in us and recognize them. Now there is born in me covetousness or anger, now sensual desires are arising . . . When the power of attention is enhanced, and one has reached the point where one misses none of the phenomena which are occurring in and around oneself, one proceeds to investigate them, and to search for their causes.

Why should anger suddenly blaze up in me? Because this man has offended me, has injured me . . .

And what effect will my impulse of anger produce in me? Will it in any way profit me? . .

All the feelings — envy, sensuality, etc. — may be the objects of this kind of examination. One must associate with them the more refined feelings of pride, vanity, etc., and also those feelings which are considered praiseworthy: sympathy, benevolence, modesty . .

He who pays attention, according to the Buddhist methods, should not give way to his impulses without examining them. Neither should he approve or blame himself, basing his blame or approval on the injunctions of moral codes whose authority and justness he has not investigated.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

If he performs a charitable deed, if he accomplishes an act of devotion, he should question himself as to the motives which he obeyed, should scrutinize his feelings and their origins, just as when he has committed an action said to be evil. The result of this kind of interrogation will often result in a shifting of moral values and will show in a much less favourable light the noble action on which one was ready to pride oneself

According to this writer the Hinayâna Buddhists practise this continuously, distinguishing four directions for the attention. on the body, on sensations, on thoughts and on the working of the mind. Another Buddhist practice for assisting the cultivation of attention is that the disciple at the end of each day should be made to recall the actions he has performed, the feelings which he has experienced, and the thoughts which he has entertained. Recollection is directed backwards, beginning with the last action, thought, sensation or feeling, and ending with the first moment of awakening. The most insignificant details are recalled equally with the most important, the idea being to allow nothing to become obliterated. Buddhism assigns to the memory a very important role, and everything that has been seen, heard or perceived must be remembered. In the ordinary way only a small proportion of the innumerable sensations and thoughts passing through the brain are clearly registered in consciousness. This exercise of recalling in the reverse order all the events, thoughts and feelings of the day is not peculiar to Buddhism. It is part of the mind control practised by Hindu schools of mental training. Some Buddhists, notably Tsong Khapa, the reformer of Tibetan Buddhism, maintained that some measure of control can even be exercised over the working of the mind during sleep. In his principle work, the *Lam-rin*, he writes:

It is essential not to waste time given to sleep, either by remaining when once asleep inert as a stone, or by allowing one's mind to wander incoherently in absurd or harmful dreams.

Practice in attention is a stepping-stone to the final requirement of the Eightfold Path, meditation. For this final requirement the disciple is recommended to seat himself in an isolated spot, and to contemplate the procession of thoughts and images which without his having

## BUDDHISM

desired it, arise and hurry through his mind like an endless slide passing through a lantern. By so doing he will come to realize that his life is but a succession of phenomena, arising and disappearing with dizzy rapidity. The origin of this movement of thoughts, images and emotions is at present unknowable to him; it is what is called 'energy arising by itself'. Also he will in time perceive that surrounding objects, like himself, are nothing but a vortex of movement. A tree ceases to appear as a solid enduring object, but will be seen as a continual succession of sudden manifestations, the apparent continuity of which is due to the rapidity with which these 'flashes' follow each other.

As a result of what he has seen both in himself and in the objects of his contemplation, the disciple will cease to believe in his individuality. He will know that he possesses no permanent and compounded ego, and knowing this, he will have arrived at the fundamental doctrines of Buddhism, namely that all aggregates are impermanent, that all aggregates are doomed to suffer, and that all the constitutive elements of existence are devoid of ego. This constitutes the creed of all Buddhists to whatever school they may belong, a creed that is put forward not as an article of faith, but as a subject to be examined, and only accepted if it be found to be true.

This idea of non-individuality is a difficult one for Europeans to grasp. Perhaps the best way of understanding it is that suggested by Marco Pallis in *Peaks and Lamas*. He pictures all living things as a river, formed from many tiny trickles in the mountains. It gathers innumerable tributaries as it flows, and increases its volume by increments from a thousand different sources. Men have mapped out the branches of the river and have given names even to the tiny channels from which these are formed. The river exists, but what drop of water that takes part in its formation has the right to say 'I am the river, I am I'? The drop exists but only as part of the river. Self-denial, therefore, means much more to the Buddhist than it does to the Christian. To the latter it implies only the avoidance of selfishness, and the struggle with the feeling of one's own importance, a feeling that generally results in the invasion of the rights of others. But the Buddhist would say that this struggle with self-indulgence is merely the treatment of a symptom. The cause of the disease lies deeper, in

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

the belief that a separate self, a permanent ego exists in this flux of sensations, thoughts and emotions. Self-denial to the Buddhist is literally self-denial. In a Tibetan work, *The Powerful Good Wish*, quoted by Pallis, it is written.

Immersed in ignorance and obscured by delusion, the Knower (Mind) was afeared and confused. Then came the idea 'I' and 'Other' and hatred. As these gained force a continuous chain of Action (Karma) was produced. The Root Ignorance is the abysmal ground of the knower's unconscious Ignorance. The other Ignorance is that which regards self and others to be different and separate. The thought which regards beings as 'two' begets a hesitating doubting state. A subtle feeling of Attachment arises, which if allowed to gain force, gradually resolves itself into strong attachment and a craving for food, clothing, dwellings, wealth and friends. There is no end to the Action flowing from ideas of dualism.

How then does the Buddhist regard a person? He sees a person as composed of five parts, called *Skandas*—a body, sensations, perceptions, mental formations (ideas, wishes, etc.) and consciousness. The terms 'I', and 'individual person', are to the Buddhist merely convenient terms for describing a changing combination of physical and psychic phenomena. Each of these five skandas, or parts, of a person are in turn compounded. The body is formed from an initial supply of material derived from the parents, that is supplemented later by the material obtained from nourishment. Even the body has no real personal existence, but is the product of the transformation of food. Nor can an 'I' be located in any other of the four aggregates of the person, that is to say in the rolling panorama of sensations, perceptions and mental forms that constitute the 'psyche'. In vain does one seek in the physical or mental parts of an individual for something that is not in turn dependent on something else, that exists by itself, 'independent and self-produced, unconnected with anything else', a 'veritable I'.

Madame David-Neel quotes a Tibetan parable that makes clear the Buddhist view of a person.

A 'person' resembles an assembly composed of a number of

## BUDDHISM

members. In this assembly discussion never ceases. Now and again one of the members rises, makes a speech, and suggests an action; his colleagues approve, and it is decided that what he has proposed shall be executed. Often several members of the assembly rise at the same time and propose different things, and each of them, for private reasons, supports his own proposal. It may happen that these differences of opinion, and the passion which each of the orators brings into the debate, will provoke a quarrel, even a violent quarrel, in the assembly. Fellow-members may even come to blows.

It also happens that some members of the assembly leave it of their own accord; others are gradually pushed out, and others again are expelled by force, by their colleagues. All this time newcomers introduce themselves into the assembly, either by gently sidling in or by forcing the doors.

Again, one notes that certain members of the assembly are slowly perishing; their voices become feeble, and finally they are no longer heard. Others, on the contrary, who were weak and timid, become stronger and bolder; they become violent, shouting their proposals, they terrify their colleagues, and dominate them, and end by making themselves dictators.

The members of this assembly are the physical and mental elements which constitute the 'person'; they are our instincts, our tendencies, our ideas, our beliefs, our desires, etc. Through the causes which engendered it, each of them is the descendant and heir of many lines of causes, of many series of phenomena, going far back into the past, and whose traces are lost in the shadowy depths of eternity.

It is thus that the psychologists of Tibet explain the contradictory tendencies of which we are conscious, and also our gradual or sudden changes of opinion and of conduct. Both one and the other depend on the temporary composition of the assembly which is the 'person', the 'I', and on the character of the members who are for the time being in the majority and elect its president.

The Buddhist argues that the only thing that could be regarded as 'real' in a person would be something that was self-engendered and homogeneous, a 'self' whose existence did not depend on external causes. Such a 'self' would have also to be 'eternal', otherwise, if it

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

came into existence at a particular moment of time, this would mean that some cause had produced it. Also, if it disappeared, this would prove that its existence had depended on certain conditions and that these conditions having ceased, its existence had also ceased.

What then is real in a man? This can only be realized when the disciple ceases to identify himself with this impermanent aggregate of physical and psychic attributes. When he has learnt this lesson personal preferences and aversions cease to have a meaning for him. He has reached the goal of non-attachment to self and abandoned his partisan attitude to life. With the departure of desire and aversion, there departs also the capacity to suffer. He is no longer compelled to act as a cog in the wheel of existence. He has reached the goal of Deliverance and Enlightenment — *Nirvāna*

The word *Nirvāna* has been much misunderstood by Europeans. Literally, it implies extinction, like the snuffing out of a candle. But that which is extinguished is nescience and its train of consequences, not the soul. Buddha defined *Nirvāna* as the cessation of the *samskāras*, or the fabrications and confections of the mind concerning the world and ourselves. And Buddha's definition was followed by words pregnant with meaning.

When thou hast understood the dissolution of all the fabrications, thou shalt understand that which is *not* fabricated (DHAMMA-PADA)

To attempt to describe the positive as opposed to the negative side of *Nirvāna* would be useless, as useless as to imagine what it is like to be living in a higher state of consciousness.

To regard '*Nirvāna*' as synonymous with the annihilation of the soul is therefore totally incorrect. There is the story that Buddha himself was asked the question:

'After death, does a Buddha [he who has attained *Nirvāna*] exist, or does he not exist?' The Buddha did not reply, but he explained the reason for his silence on this point. A reply to this question would be profitless for him who received it, said the Buddha. 'Whether the Buddha exists or does not exist after death, one fact remains: there is birth, decrepitude, death, suffering, on which subjects I have given my teachings, showing the origin, the

## BUDDHISM

cause, and the ending of suffering, and the Way which leads to this ending . . . I have not said whether the Buddha exists or does not exist after death because that has nothing to do with the foundations of the doctrine and does not lead to the absence of passion, to peace, to supernormal faculties, to the supreme wisdom, to Nirvāna.' (MADAME DAVID-NEEL.)

## CHAPTER XIV

### CHRIST AND BUDDHA

It was said that Christianity and Buddhism have much in common. This is explained by two facts, the similarity of the central truths expressed by all great religions, and the background against which Christianity grew up. Christianity can indeed only be understood if this background be studied.

During Christ's lifetime there were several sections of Judaism. Neander divides the Israel of that day into three main sections, the Pharisees, who taught the dead letter of the law, the Sadducees, who did not believe in any spiritual life, and various mystical sects. The best known representatives of this third section of Israel were the Essenes, the Therapeutae and the Nazarenes. Although all these mystical branches of Israel had their distinguishing features they were closely allied and, therefore, equally hateful to the orthodox priests and Pharisees. So fearful was the dominant party of the mystical movement in Judea that according to Jerome all devout Jews were required to utter the following curse thrice daily. 'Send Thy curse, O God, upon the Nazarenes.' The term Nazarene, or Nazirite, is derived from the root word, *nazir*, signifying separation, or retirement from the world. The true Nazirite was a recluse, a prophet who dedicated himself to a spiritual life and made a vow of chastity and to abstain from wine. He lived a life of great austerity and allowed his hair to grow long, like that of an Indian yogi. John the Baptist was a member of this sect. Actually we know less about the beliefs of the Nazarenes than about those of the closely-allied Essenes and the Therapeutae, but by studying one of these three sects we are at the same time learning much about the others. A great deal of interesting information on this subject will be found in *Buddhism in Christendom*, by Arthur Lillic. The Therapeutae, as their name implies, were healers of body and soul. From Philo we learn that they and the Essenes lived

## CHRIST AND BUDDHA

an ascetic life, spending 'their time in fasting and contemplation, in prayer or reading. They believe themselves favoured with divine illumination – an inner light. They assemble on the Sabbath for worship, and to listen to mystical discourses on the traditional lore which they say has been handed down in secret amongst themselves'. He gives further details of their beliefs and their way of living. They believed that God had breathed into man some of his own divinity and that contemplation of this divine essence was the noblest exercise of man. Their aim was to enter into communion with the spiritual part of their nature. The similarity between the beliefs and practices of the Essenes and those of the Buddhists is emphasized in this description. Alliance with a higher world is the union desired by all Buddhists and yogis. A great many writers have no hesitation in asserting that the Essenes and the Therapeutae derived their beliefs and their practices directly from Buddhist missionaries living in Alexandria. Whether this be so or not it is impossible after studying the lives of the Essenes and Therapeutae to doubt that these mystical branches of Judaism borrowed much from Indian sources. Even a writer so unsympathetic to Eastern religions as Dean Milman gave it as his opinion that the Therapeutae sprang from 'the contemplative and indolent fraternities of India'.

This helps us to understand the uncompromising hostility of the orthodox Jewish priest to both John the Baptist and Christ. It is generally accepted that the former belonged to the Nazarene sect, but few ecclesiastical scholars would probably be prepared to admit the possibility that Christ was in sympathy with the mystical side of Judaism. Nevertheless, we find the opponents of Christ bringing the same indictment against Him that was brought against John the Baptist. Christ was also accused of being a member of the hated sect, the Nazarenes. This was the accusation written upon the Cross, 'Jesus the Nazarene, the King of the Jews'. It is true that orthodox churchmen prefer to regard the words ὁ Ναζαρενῶς (John xix. 19) when applied to Christ as meaning 'of Nazareth', rather than 'the Nazarene'. They justify this translation by the statement in the Gospel of St. Matthew (ii 23) that after the return from Egypt Jesus stayed in the village of Nazareth with his parents. It is difficult,

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

however, to explain thus why Pilate should record such an unimportant event alongside of the indictment that Christ proclaimed himself the King of the Jews. The hatred that orthodox Judaism felt for the Nazarenes was later transferred to Christ's follower, Paul. Tertullus the Orator sums up his accusations against Paul in the words:

For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition amongst all the Jews, throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of Nazarenes (Acts xxiv. 5).

In the eyes of the Pharisees and the orthodox priests John the Baptist, Christ and Paul alike were members of the hated mystical sect.

Even if we disagree with this view that Christ was actually linked up with these mystical sects, and consequently, indirectly with Buddhism, we must admit that he was more in sympathy with them than with the pharisaical brand of Judaism. Otherwise it is difficult to understand why he elected to be baptized by John, and himself made use of a rite widely practised by the Essenes. In any case, the differences between the teachings of Christ and John the Baptist were so trifling that five of the latter's disciples (Andrew, John, Philip, Peter and Bartholomew) were able to become Christ's Apostles without violating their Nazarene vows.

We know nothing about Christ during his youth and early manhood. A few pictures are given of him in the gospels as a child, and then he reappears as a man of thirty-three equipped for his mission, learned in the law, speaking as one with authority, and capable of holding his own against the lawyers and scholars who were only too eager to trip him up. What was Christ doing during those all-important years? There is nothing but legend on which to base any answer, one legend that he was working with John the Baptist, and the other that he was in an Essene monastery. Nobody can say how much or how little truth lies in these legends, but there can, at any rate, be little doubt that Christ had heard of Buddha before he started his mission. In spite of the poorness of communications in the ancient world, culture permeated along the caravan routes, and through the agency of travelling scholars and holy men. Oral teaching took the place of books, and what is more likely than that a serious-minded

## CHRIST AND BUDDHA

young man who knew, in his inmost heart, that he was dedicated to a mission to his country would take any opportunity that presented itself of sitting at the feet of a scholarly or devout traveller who arrived in the neighbourhood of his home? Whatever may have been the nature of Christ's divinity, he lived the life of an ordinary man, and as such, would equip himself to the best of his ability for his great mission to mankind. But it must be confessed that we possess only the scantiest knowledge concerning Christ. He left no writing, and even although the gospels may have been initially compiled in the first century, it is unlikely that they were completed until much later. Only in the second generation was the necessity felt for putting down on paper Christ's sayings, and the main incidents in his life. Previously to that, these sayings were spread by word of mouth, a method that seldom guarantees any high degree of accuracy. The evangelists finally collected these orally transmitted sayings, with any scrap of writing that may have been in existence, and compiled the gospels. The similarity of the Synoptic Gospels is explained by the hypothesis that Matthew and Luke used Mark's earlier version, together with an additional source, now lost, and known as Q. Critics have advanced the opinion that, regarded as historical documents, the gospels are probably quite inaccurate, and that in writing them, their authors were more eager to explain the faith of the Church (which by then had been formed), than to report verbatim the sayings of Christ. And even when no deliberate effort was made to justify the views of the developing church by putting into Christ's mouth appropriate words, it is an undoubted fact that much of Christ's message has been lost later in transcription and translation. Every translator is familiar with the temptation to drag obscure sayings into line with preconceived views of what they are likely to mean. Even a change in punctuation or the substitution of an indefinite for a definite article, may be sufficient to alter the meaning of a difficult passage, and of these there are many in the gospels. So, in the words of a great scholar of the gospels, we must accept the fact

that the form of the earthly, no less than of the heavenly, Christ, is for the most part hidden from us. For all the inestimable value of the Gospels, they yield us little more than a whisper of His voice;

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

we trace in them but the outskirts of His ways. (*History and Interpretation of the Gospels*, by R. H. LIGHTFOOT.)

This criticism of the historical accuracy of the gospels does not alter the fact that they could only have been written by men living on a higher level than the rest of mankind. However much they may have suffered in translation they bear unmistakable evidence of being the work of a higher type of humanity. Even if it were proved that Christ never existed but that the writers of the gospels created him for their own purposes, as Plato is said to have created Socrates, the value of the gospels as a higher revelation on which a religion can be founded still remains. That is one of the reasons why many of the sayings found in the gospels are difficult of comprehension by ordinary humanity.

Whether Christ was influenced by non-semitic factors or not, the builders of the early church undoubtedly were. This is particularly noticeable in the description of the circumstances of Christ's birth. These details are not given in the earlier gospel, that of St. Mark, and are probably later interpolations added possibly even after those responsible for the gospels of St. Matthew and St. Luke had completed their work. The story of the events preceding Christ's birth were probably added hundreds of years later, at a time when the church was laying special emphasis on the divine origin of its founder. The Jews, as a race, put great weight on written authority, and were never tired of asserting that the events in the gospel were in accordance with the words uttered by some Old Testament prophet. They had the lawyer's attitude to religion, and liked to see everything properly documented and confirmed by a recognized authority. It was likely that they were anxious to see included in the gospels a suitable setting for the coming of Christ and to add to the splendour of the ideas his words conveyed the visible testimony of miraculous portents and signs. When this desire is present there is a similarity in the miraculous setting that is chosen. Since Buddha preceded Christ by five hundred years, it is possible that those who added this account of the coming of Christ to the gospels borrowed from Indian literature. Just as many years passed before the story of Christ's life was put on paper, so the

## CHRIST AND BUDDHA

details of Buddha's miraculous birth were only recorded a hundred and fifty years after his death. Consequently it is probable that legend played a large part in the description of Christ's birth, as it undoubtedly did in that of Buddha.

Buddha, like Christ, was reputed to be of virgin birth. His father was informed by angels of the coming of a miraculous child, and, according to the *Lalita Vistara*, 'the queen was permitted to lead the life of a virgin for thirty-two months' She was told, as was Mary, in a vision of the wondrous son that she would bear. On the day of Gautama's birth, an old priest plays the part of Simeon in the gospels, coming down from the mountain to predict the future greatness of Gautama. When he asked the angels why they rejoiced, they replied that 'they were joyful and exceedingly glad because the Buddha had been born, the Buddha on whom the hopes of humanity rested'. Then having examined the child and confirmed the presence in him of the thirty-two signs of Buddhahood, he did reverence before him and returned whence he came.

At the threshold of his career, Buddha, like Christ, was tempted by the Evil One, *Mara*. He was offered world dominion if he would give up his quest. Buddha replied: 'He who has seen pain and the source of pain, how could such a one bow to lusts?' The Evil One then vanished, and Buddha continued in his search for truth. Miracles also are accredited to Buddha, the blind receiving their sight, the deaf their hearing and the lame the power to walk. He also became transfigured in the presence of his disciples, of which, like Christ, he had twelve. With compassion for all men, he set out to preach the way of salvation, healing the sick and even feeding the multitude from a small cake placed in his begging bowl. After the multitude had been fed many fragments remained over.

Buddha taught the same golden rule as Christ, summed up in the words, 'Do as you would be done by, kill not, nor cause to kill'. Like Christ, Buddha taught by practical demonstration. On one occasion, when the monks of a monastery neglected to look after a sick brother, the Buddha washed and tended him with his own hands, saying afterwards to those who had failed in their duty 'Whoever shall wait upon me, let him wait upon the sick', thereby proclaiming the

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

oneness of humanity and the view that services to the sick and destitute were services rendered to his cause.

As a mother would guard the life of her one and only son, at the risk of her own, even so let each one practise infinite sympathy towards all beings in all the world. Let goodwill without measure, impartial, unmixed, without enmity, prevail throughout the world, above, beneath, around.

Buddha and Christ drew the same sharp line between the two worlds, of the Spirit and of Mammon. They urged their disciples to lay up for themselves treasure in heaven, which neither moth nor rust would corrupt nor thieves break through and steal.

A man [said Buddha] buries a treasure in a deep pit, which lying day after day concealed therein profits him nothing . . . But there is a treasure laid up in the heart, a treasure of charity, piety, temperance, soberness, a treasure secure that cannot pass away. When a man leaves the fleeting riches of this world, thus he takes with him after death.

The doctrines of non-violence and of rendering good for evil were equally prominent in both teachings. When a disciple proposed to return to his native town to preach to his fellow-townsmen, Buddha said:

'The people of Sunarparanta are exceedingly violent, if they revile you, what will you do?' 'I will not return the blow.' 'And if they try to kill you?' 'Death,' answered the disciple, 'is no evil. Many even desire it in order to escape the vanities of this life; but I shall take no steps either to delay or hasten the time of my departure.'

It may be said that the doctrine of non-attachment that is so important in Buddhism has no place in Christianity. Non-attachment to worldly goods or pleasure is, however, implicit in all Christ's teaching. When Christ turned to the rich young man, who had asked what he should do to be saved, and said: 'Sell all thou hast and give it to the poor', he was not thinking of the benefit that the gift would bring to the needy. He saw that the young ruler was so attached to his position and his possessions that they constituted the chief

## CHRIST AND BUDDHA

obstacle to his salvation. Therefore his first step was to free himself from these encumbrances. 'Take no thought of what ye shall eat, what ye shall drink, and wherewithal ye shall be clothed', is itself a warning against the dangers of attachment, as were also his instructions to his disciples when he sent them out on their mission.

Renan, in his life of Jesus, points out that the parable was essentially a Buddhist and not a Jewish method of teaching. He then remarks that obviously Christ could not have had any knowledge of Buddha. But what right had Renan to make this assumption? Not only did Christ make use of parables in his teaching, but some of these parables were very similar to those narrated by Buddha. Buddha describes himself as a 'Sower of the Word'. There also exists a strange parallel between some of the incidents in the gospels that were used as an object lesson for teaching and the incidents recorded of Buddha's disciples, Peter's attempting to walk on the Lake of Galilee, and sinking because of lack of faith, bears a strong resemblance to a story told of one of Buddha's followers in the *Jataka*. In this we read of a young and eager disciple, who finding no boat, decided to walk upon the water. In mid-stream the waves rise, and losing faith he begins to sink. Max Müller comments on this parallel, stating that although the idea of walking on water is a common one, that of sinking for lack of faith can only be accounted for by some historical contact, or transference.

Our natural inclination [he adds] would be to suppose that the Buddhist stories were borrowed from our Christian sources, and not vice-versa. But here the conscience of the scholar comes in. Some of these stories are found in the Hinayana Buddhist Canon, and date therefore before the Christian era.

Yet if it be true that in its early formative stage, Christianity derived help from the older established Buddhism, there is nothing that need distress Christians in that idea. Whether historically connected or not, Christianity and Buddhism were twin expressions of one great spiritual movement. The existence of similarities, far from discrediting either religion, reveals the unity of religious feeling, a unity that is so complete that even the words and parables used by the great teachers

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

are often the same. The gospels, and more especially the interpolations in the later gospels, tell us what those who followed Christ had to say about the life and teaching of their divine leader long after he had left them. Sometimes these additions rested on an historical basis, sometimes they were purely legendary. Would it be surprising if in narrating these legends the authors were unconsciously influenced by the stories that were told of Buddha? Later it will be seen that the services of the early Church were strongly influenced by the numerous cults and religions that were brought to Alexandria by the scholars of different races and creeds, who flocked to that city of learning. The ancient mysteries of Egypt, the religions of Syria, Persia, India and of even more distant lands, met in this rallying-point of culture, and all exerted some influence on the impressionable and formative period of the Church.

But although the teachings of Christ and of Buddha had so much in common, there were certain differences between them of a non-essential nature. Christ was a Jew, and made use of the Jewish culture and tradition in his teaching. He announced that he had come not to alter the ancient law, but to fulfil it. Repeatedly he uses the words: 'Ye have heard how it was said of old', and then he gives to the old law a new significance and life. His disciples were ill-educated men, his audiences simple peasants, and he appealed to that which they all had in common, a reverence for their ancient traditions, and for the law and the prophets. The philosophical discussions of Buddha would have been meaningless to them, for even the educated Jew cared far more for an authoritative theology than for philosophy. India, on the other hand, since the dawn of its culture, has been the home of philosophical and metaphysical speculation. There was no need for Buddha to appeal to authority, for his audience were accustomed to philosophical discussions and put little reliance on the written word.

This accounts for many of the differences between Christian and Buddhist doctrine. Buddha looked upon the Absolute as super-personal spirit, Christ referred to the Absolute as the Father, with the attributes of a personal God. In Christianity there is no idea of reincarnation, or of the working out of the law of Karma, in Buddhism no parallel to the redemption of the world through the

## CHRIST AND BUDDHA

death of a divine spirit made flesh. This was essentially a Jewish idea, an idea that lies behind the offering of sacrifices and the story of Abraham and Isaac.

It has been said that to understand any one religion, it is necessary to study two, and no two religions throw more light upon each other than Christianity and Buddhism. The Western mind tends to be matter of fact, logical and intolerant of symbolism, and yet symbolism is the only language in which a religion can express itself. Moreover, as Christianity itself is an Eastern religion it has borrowed many of its symbols from the East, amongst others the symbol of the Trinity. A greater understanding of Christianity can therefore be obtained from a study of Buddhism, and, what is of chief importance, an understanding of that vital essence of the religion which is soonest lost. 'Five hundred years, Ananda', said Buddha, 'will the doctrine of the Truth abide.' Buddha died in 470 B.C., and five hundred years later the new Teacher, whose advent Buddha had foretold (Maitreya, the Buddha of Brotherly Love), was preaching the same truths on the shores of Galilee

## CHAPTER XV

### THE CHURCH

AFTER the loss of their leader, it was natural that the apostles and all those who had accepted Christ's message should band together in the small community that eventually was to become the Church. They formed a brotherhood in a hostile world, for only by living together could they find strength to put into practice the teaching of their Master. An account of their method of living is given in the Acts of the Apostles II, 42-47

And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' teaching and fellowship, in the breaking of bread and the prayers . . .

And all that believed were together, and had all things in common:

And they sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all, according as any man had need

And day by day, continuing stedfastly with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread at home, they did take their food with gladness and singleness of heart,

Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to them day by day those that were being saved.

Here was an experiment in Communism, carried out under the only conditions that made Communism possible, that is to say by men who had given up the world for the sake of a spiritual ideal. It appears to have met with a certain measure of success, for as late as the second century we have news of the Christian community in the Epistle to Diognetus.

Christians are not distinguished from the rest of mankind either in locality or in speech or in customs. For they dwell not somewhere in cities of their own, neither do they use some different language, nor practise an extraordinary kind of life. Nor again do they possess any invention discovered by intelligence or study of ingenious man, nor are they masters of any human dogma, as

## THE CHURCH

some are. But while they dwell in cities of Greeks and Barbarians, as the lot of each is cast, and follow the native customs in dress and food and other arrangements of life, yet the constitution of their own citizenship, which they set forth, is marvellous, and confessedly contradicts expectation. They dwell in their own countries, but only as sojourners; they bear their share in all things as citizens, and they endure all hardships as strangers. Every foreign country is a fatherland to them, and every fatherland is foreign. They marry like all other men and they beget children; but they do not cast away their offspring. They have their meals in common, but not their wives. They find themselves in the flesh, and yet they live not after the flesh. Their existence is on earth, but their citizenship is in Heaven. They obey the established laws, and they surpass the laws in their own lives. They love all men, and they are persecuted by all. (*The Apostolic Fathers*, by Bishop Lightfoot. Quoted by the Bishop of Chichester in *Christianity and World Order* )

Christianity started as a Jewish faith and to St. Paul belongs the credit of freeing it from its parochial character so that it became a world religion. The Jewish followers of Christ had reconciled themselves to the fact that their Messiah had come to establish a spiritual and not a temporal kingdom, but they still clung to the idea that Christianity was only for the Jews. Paul boldly contested this view and asserted that Christians were freed from the obligation to observe the Jewish law. This caused a serious conflict amongst his followers, but he carried his point and Christianity spread widely beyond the confines of Judea. Christianity in its universal form soon won great victories, and with the conversion of Constantine finally became permanently established in the Roman world.

In spite of this the nationalistic bias of Jewish thought continued to exert a very strong influence on the early Christian Church. St. Paul had won his victory, and Christianity was for all mankind, and not only for the Jews, but a nation that prided itself on being the chosen race was not going to abandon any of its exclusiveness. Men can often be recognized in the gods that they create, and the Jews had created for themselves a God that often showed himself to be narrow, jealous and angry, the God of the Old Testament. Some of this Jewish narrow-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

ness and jealousy was carried into the Church, and still remains in the Church. The early Church recognized no other path to salvation than that which it prescribed, and this attitude to other religions is retained by the majority of modern churchmen. In making this assertion the churches do not mean only that Christianity offers the best and surest means of attaining spiritual salvation, but that it is the one and only means, all other religions being founded on false doctrines. This narrow view, sometimes regarded as loyalty to the Church, is peculiar to Christianity, for even the more fanatical of the Mohammedans recognize Christ as one of their prophets; and in Buddhism it does not exist.

At first the community of Christians was only a fellowship of those who awaited the return of their leader. Any arrangements they might make were in the nature of an interim programme, to fill the gap between the first and second coming of Christ. Soon he would appear again to take charge of everything, and to found a new spiritual kingdom on earth. Whatever hardships they were called upon to endure were only temporary hardships, whatever arrangements they made would only be temporary arrangements. But with the passage of time and the disappointment of their hopes, it finally became imperative for the Christians to organize their meetings and to formulate more clearly their beliefs. Up till then complete liberty of action had been allowed to all taking part in the services, as it is allowed at the present day to members of a Quaker community. This had, however, led to confusion and even to discord during meetings. Particular men were therefore nominated to take charge of these, and at the same time, the services became more elaborate and more stereotyped in form. The sacrament of baptism became very important and only properly baptized members were admitted to the community. This, in turn, made it necessary to decide what requirements in the way of belief should be demanded of those who sought membership of the Christian community.

This was no easy matter. Christ had been far less explicit than Buddha in formulating the philosophical basis of his teaching. It was necessary therefore for the Church to define its own beliefs, and to make good any deficiencies by borrowing from other sources the philo-

## THE CHURCH

sophical doctrine that it lacked. Slowly and painfully this was done, but not without provoking much conflict amongst its leaders. The chief cults that vied with Christianity at that time were Mithraism, the Egyptian Mysteries, and Alexandrine theology, the last named being a blend of Greek, Hindu and Jewish thought. From all these sources the Church took something. From Greek philosophy, under the guidance of Philo, it derived the doctrine of the Logos, from the Egyptian Mysteries, material for the Church services, and from the Gnostic sect, a great amount of Greek and Hindu thought.

Gnosticism is of special interest since it exerted a strong influence on the early Church. It had existed long before Christianity, and much of its teaching had been derived from the Upanishads. This is apparent when we consider its most important tenets. The Gnostics believed: (1) that the Divine Being is indefinable and infinite, above all thought and expression; (2) that the Cosmos is a blend of divine and non-divine principles and represents the descent of spirit into matter; (3) that the deliverance of the spirit from its union with matter, or the world of sensuality, is brought about by asceticism and contemplation, and that these practices lead to Gnosis, or Wisdom; (4) that Gnosis is not achieved by the accumulation of intellectual knowledge, or logical thought, but by seeing God; (5) that the perfect Gnostic is the man who is free from the world and master of himself. He is emancipated from the dead letter and the outward symbols of religion, having realized the truth. He lives in God and may truly be said to have passed from death to life. Many Gnostics believed also in the pre-existence of and in the rebirth of the soul. They practised certain rites to which the initiated alone were admitted.

In the first century after Christ Gnosticism became fused with Christianity and supplied much of the philosophy that the early Church lacked. Gnostics accepted the Christian creed and looked upon themselves as Christians, but the partnership between Gnosticism and Christianity proved an unhappy one, and ended in the Gnostics being condemned as heretics and ejected from the Church. Undoubtedly the Church suffered afterwards from the loss of its Gnostic element.

Not only had the Gnostics contributed much of that vital energy that is essential in the life of all religion, but it had supplied the Church

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN .

with much of its philosophy and symbolism. It is unnecessary to attempt to furnish even a brief sketch of the early struggles of the Church to establish its doctrines and to formulate its creed. Unfortunately it is just as easy to become hypnotized by words in a religious as in a philosophical argument, and rival schools of theology soon appeared in the Christian assemblies. The leaders of these different factions felt deeply the truth of what they proclaimed, and theological quarrels became common and bitter in the early years of the Church's foundation. This was particularly so when attempts were made to formulate clearly the nature of the divinity of Christ and the doctrine of the Trinity. The ecclesiastical scholastics cared more for intellectual discussions than for the principles enunciated in the Sermon on the Mount. Some of the Church's leaders saw the danger that this growth of theology and doctrine brought with it:

Faithful souls [wrote St Hilary of Poitiers] would be contented with the word of God, which bids us 'Go teach all nations, baptising them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost' But alas, we are driven by the faults of our heretical opponents to do things unlawful, to scale heights inaccessible, to speak of what is unspeakable, to presume where we ought not. And whereas it is by faith alone that we should worship the Father, and reverence the Son, and be filled with the Spirit, we are now obliged to strain our weak language with the utterance of things beyond its scope; forced into this evil procedure by the evil procedure of our foes Hence, what should be matter of silent meditation, must now needs be imperilled by exposition in words

But the scholastics of the Church once having started on the task of defining the indefinable were not easily deterred. Council after council was summoned, words piled on words, and confusion increased. Again in A D 360 we find Hilary writing, 'Since Nicaea we have done nothing but compose creeds Every year we make new creeds and define invisible mysteries . Tearing one another to pieces, we have been the cause of one another's ruin'

At the numerous church assemblies and councils heretical views were denounced and those who held them expelled from the fold. It was

## THE CHURCH

agreed that the original dependence on the Holy Spirit for light and guidance was no longer adequate, since heretical as well as orthodox members of the community claimed to have enjoyed the divine illumination. Other safeguards against heterodoxy therefore now appeared to be necessary. These were provided by proclaiming that the apostles had appointed bishops as their successors, and that the latter were in possession of a divine grace that enabled them to transmit and interpret without error the teachings that the apostles had committed to them. In this manner arose the famous theory of 'apostolic succession', a succession upon which the Roman Catholic Church still bases its exclusive authority. Naturally the Church was now in a much stronger position. Not only did it possess an authoritative apostolic doctrine, but also a permanent apostolic office to which alone belonged the right to determine what that doctrine should be. Pragmatically the adoption of the doctrine was entirely justified. But actually it has no meaning. The only true succession in the Church has been through its line of saints. By this is meant not necessarily the succession of saints recorded in the Church's calendar, but of men and women who, in spite of manifold difficulties, have striven to follow the teaching of Christ. It is difficult to see how even the most enthusiastic churchman can read the history of the mediæval Church and still retain the idea of an unbroken line of inspired apostles.

Christianity, under the growing dominance of the Church, soon became a very different religion from that which Christ had taught. Christ had an abhorrence of dogma and refused to become involved in the arguments dear to the heart of the lawyers and priests of Judea. Throughout his life his chief opponents had always been the priests and Pharisees who had insisted on salvation by orthodoxy, and on attention to the letter of the law. But now, within a few hundred years of his death, the Church made the acceptance of dogma a *sine qua non* to salvation. Christianity became a religion based on the authority of the Church, and baptism was made conditional on the acceptance of a supernaturally imparted tradition. Out of a teaching that paid little attention to rites and formalities, was built up an elaborate ecclesiastical structure. Loyalty to the Church was demanded of its members rather than loyalty to Christ's teaching, and as the

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Church soon became a national institution this meant loyalty to the State. As the Church became politically-minded the effect on its teaching became more apparent. The interpretation of God's will at the Council of Clermont in A.D. 1095, that it was the duty of all Christians to go forth and slaughter the Saracens was a foretaste of what was to come. Religion, henceforth, was to be used to sanctify men's passions.

During the Middle Ages this transformation of a religion into a political organization was completed. A contemplative spiritual religion had become a dogmatic creed promulgated by a despotic Church jealous of its temporal power. Christianity still continued to stir the emotions and sentiments of its adherents but had lost its power to transform man's nature. It was now only with the utmost peril that a Christian dared to utter a word against any church doctrine. Authority was supreme and if need be could call in the help of the Inquisition, for it was by means of the thumbscrew and stake that the Church preserved the sanctity of its doctrines. During the eleventh, twelfth and thirteenth centuries three hundred thousand persons were put to death for heresy in the city of Madrid alone, and there is little doubt that if Christ had returned to earth, he would have been burnt for heretical views regarding his own divinity. It was not a layman but an officer of the Church (Canon Barry) who wrote: 'The one really formidable argument against the truth of the Christian religion is the record of the Christian Church.'

The Church merely reflected the cruelty of mankind. It had elected to become a political organization, and as such, was neither better nor worse than other political organizations. But in spite of its lamentable failure, Europe owes a great debt to the Church. During the darkest years of its history Christian monasteries kept alight the lamp of culture in a barbarous world. There were countless individuals in monastic orders who in secret deplored the cruelty and political intrigues of their Church but were unable to take any effective steps to change its policy. Usually they appeared outwardly to be orthodox churchmen, but sometimes, as in the case of the ecclesiastical alchemists, they hid their spiritual beliefs behind the façade of some external activity. And even although the Church had lost its spiritual essence, it still remained the

## THE CHURCH

home of scholarship. What intellectual life survived during those Dark Ages survived only in the Church. Great ecclesiastical scholars gathered round them all the cultured and learned men of the day, so that the Church remained the centre of the intellectual life of Europe. It was the Church also that made possible the beginning of scientific inquiry. (Copernicus is said to have conceived the hypothesis of the earth's revolution round the sun as a result of his study of the doctrine of the Trinity.)

It would be unjust to the Church to suggest that because it had become a political institution it ceased to have any spiritual significance. Although many of its leaders were more interested in theological discussions than in the teachings of Christ, there were countless men living in monasteries, or moving about amongst the poor, who strove to live in accordance with the precepts embodied in the Sermon on the Mount. And even when they failed to live up to these ideals, the mere fact that monasteries existed, that services were held in Churches, and that men had given up worldly ambition for the sake of something that they held to be of greater value, was a continual reminder that there existed another, and a spiritual, world. Nor did it matter that many of these humbler followers of Christ were ill-educated men who could only conceive of a Universal Spirit in crude anthropomorphic terms, as a personal God to be worshipped through the medium of holy images and saintly relics. Different forms of worship are as necessary to different types of men as are different conceptions of time and space necessary to varying levels of intelligence. Learned theologians might discuss till they were exhausted the exact nature of the Trinity, but the simple ministrations of the priests gave to the common people the nourishment that was needed to keep the spiritual side of their nature alive.

It is no more possible to standardize the means by which men find expression for the religious sentiments within them than it is possible to standardize the art by means of which they express their feelings for beauty. Different methods of worship are as natural as are different schools of music and painting. It is not the breaking up of the Church into different sects that is to be deplored, but the tendency on the part of each of these sects to claim for itself a monopoly of truth, and to

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

regard other schools of Christianity with scorn, or even with open hostility.

It is satisfactory to know that of recent years there has been a determined effort on the part of different denominations of Christians to sink their differences and to work together for the common good. The Churches hope, thereby, to be able to exert their influence on society so that it may be encouraged to live in accordance with spiritual instead of purely material principles. At the Oxford Conference held in 1937 delegates from most of the Christian Churches, with the exception of the Roman Catholic, discussed the difficult problems of war, the relation of the Church to the State and a number of social problems, such as unemployment and poverty. It was hoped that by a well-organized effort on the part of the Churches sufficient pressure could be brought to bear upon society to induce it to tackle some of the more flagrant social evils. The difficulties attendant on such an effort immediately became apparent, for three contradictory schools of thought were found to exist. The first group of churchmen consisted of those who insisted on a literal obedience to the commandments of the Sermon on the Mount 'Resist not evil'; 'If any man will sue thee at the law and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also'. (Matthew v, 39-40). A second group went to the opposite extreme and declared that whilst these principles must govern the intimate personal life of the individual, they could not be applied to the wider sphere of the common life. Those who belonged to this group felt indeed that there was no moral standard that was applicable to humanity at large. Thirdly there existed a school of thought which attempted to steer a middle course. Whilst there existed no possibility of applying the full commandment of the gospels in any wholesale fashion, there was available a moral standard for the common life that had some relation to it. It was felt that in time this could be made to approximate more nearly to the full commandment.

Without wishing to discuss at length these different opinions, to the writer it would seem to be obvious that any attempt to foist the principles enunciated in the Sermon on the Mount on an unwilling society is foredoomed to failure. The Church itself as a body has failed to live according to these principles, however much the individuals

## THE CHURCH

that made up the Church have striven to follow the example set by Christ. Any attempt to apply them generally to society would have results as unexpected as those that followed the forcible introduction of teetotalism into America, and of communal living into Russia. Who among the ardent prohibitionists would have expected that the result of their efforts would be to increase drunkenness in their country and to initiate the rule of the gangster? Could any idealistic socialist have foreseen that within a few years there would appear in Russia a despotism more ruthless than any that had preceded it and a greater slavery of those whom he had hoped to liberate? So also would the forcible introduction of an ethic that is far above the level of human conduct have entirely unexpected results. There is much also to support the view that Christ set for his disciples a much higher standard than he expected of the multitude. Generally he spoke to the crowds that followed him only in parables, explaining their meaning afterwards to the small inner circle of disciples. Clement of Alexandria, who was separated from Christ by a shorter period of time, was probably in a better position than we are to understand his method of teaching. He held that Christ's teaching was twofold, and that the higher knowledge was imparted only to some of his disciples. 'It was not designed for the multitude, but communicated to those only who were capable of receiving it orally, not in writing.' (*Clement of Alexandria*, by Dr. Kaye.)

What is of importance to note is that at the very beginning of a sincere attempt on the part of the Churches to work together, there has been found to exist this deep cleavage in opinion. At the same time and in spite of all these differences in opinion, each section of the Church regards itself, not merely as a community of Christians, but as a corporate body invested with supernatural powers and under direct divine guidance.

The life of the Christian [writes the Bishop of Chichester], wherever he is engaged, is maimed and incomplete unless it finds its focus in communion with God and in common prayer with God's people. It is by actively worshipping membership in the church, by actual partaking in the liturgy and the services, and actual hearing of the Word and sharing in the Sacramental life,

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

that he learns and helps others to enjoy the secret of true community and receives the grace for a new way of living.

These words would seem to imply ability on the part of each section of the Church to bestow that grace which is necessary for a new way of living. By his church membership the individual does not only benefit from association with others more experienced and more developed than himself, but merely by partaking in the Church liturgy and sharing in the services, he receives a special grace without which a new way of living would be difficult or impossible to him. And because the bishop himself recognizes and deplures the differences in opinion in the various Churches, each of which claims the power to bestow this special grace, he proposes that a kind of 'Christian Consultative Body' should be formed. In addition he would like to see elected a 'Standing Theological and Expert Commission', assisted by an adequately staffed secretariat. It is suggested that it should be the work of both these bodies to arrive at the implications of the Sermon on the Mount and to map out a common ground for action.

But is it necessary to await the deliberations of a Standing Theological and Expert Commission in order to discover the implications of the Sermon on the Mount? And if the Commission be summoned, will it necessarily find them? In a letter written to a friend by Gregory of Nazianzus, who presided at an Ecumenical Council in A.D. 381, I find these words:

My own inclination is to avoid all assemblies of Bishops, for I have never seen any Council come to a good end, nor solve any evils. It usually increases them. You will always find there love of contention and love of power

It is satisfactory to know that so many sections of the Christian Church are making an effort to reach agreement, and there is no doubt that the test of absence of contradiction applied by Samkara to philosophical concepts is equally applicable to Church doctrines. Nor need the Churches in their dilemma hesitate to apply such a test, for in their teaching there undoubtedly exists a large measure of agreement. But in this call of the bishop to form a Christian Consultative Body and a Standing Theological and Expert Commission there is heard a note that has been too frequently heard before, a note that once resounded

## THE CHURCH

along the miles of corridors of the now abandoned Palace of Peace at Geneva, and would also be heard, were it ever to be built, along the corridors of the Scientific Institute that Alexis Carrel would like to see established as a means of saving man. It is natural that a churchman should entrust the salvation of the world to a Theological Commission, and that a scientist should entrust it to a body of scientists, but unfortunately both classes of reformers would encounter the same difficulty. The theologians might succeed in eliminating some of the differences of opinion that at present split the Churches into parties, and the scientists might succeed in creating a saner society, but both would be equally powerless to effect from without an inner change in the heart of man. Far be it from the writer to suggest that the results obtained from the labour of the theologians and the scientists would be worthless, even if it failed to achieve that which it had set out to do. In some parts of modern Europe (for example in Germany, Russia and Italy) conditions for the living of a life in accordance with any ideals are so difficult as to make it almost impossible. If the theologians and scientists could create for the individual seeker after truth a milieu that was more favourable to his efforts they would have done all that could legitimately be expected of them.

In this world there is nothing that is entirely new; every event is a recurrence of a similar event in the past. In the days of Samkara there existed a similar controversy between the authority of ritualistic religion and the individual's claim to approach truth directly. Samkara, the philosopher, came to the same conclusion on the subject as did Ramakrishna, the religious devotee, namely that church services and rituals were of the greatest importance as an aid to spiritual progress. At the same time Samkara maintained that as *Jñāna*, or direct knowledge of the Supreme Spirit, was the chief end of man's endeavour, the exclusive supremacy of Vedic ritualism was to be avoided. He was convinced that the chief danger of a cult of ceremonies lay in the growth of a pharisaical attitude to religion. As Christ denounced the Pharisees, and Paul the lawyers, so likewise did Samkara declare that ceremonial piety by itself was not the end of religion, and might even become a deadly enemy of it. He did not dismiss the Vedic code as useless. He asserted only that whilst the true philosopher

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

could advance beyond the Vedic rules of life, others were called upon to conform to Vedic regulations, not in the expectation of good things here or hereafter, but out of a sense of duty, and as a help to the development of the moral competency for the study of the Vedānta. Vedic piety helps a man by turning his mind towards the inner soul and then leading him to the realization of the spiritual goal (RADHAKRISHNAN.)

Similarly the Church with its ceremonies and ritual is of assistance in directing attention to the world of spiritual values; it is a beacon that acts as a continual reminder that as well as the life of the body there is also the life of the spirit.

The hope for mankind does not lie in the action of any corporate body be it ever so powerful, but in the influence of individual men and women who for the sake of a greater have sacrificed a lesser aim. There is no possibility of any mass movement in Christianity or in any other religion. As has been pointed out it would seem that Christ himself expected little of the crowds who gathered to hear him and witnessed his miracles. He talked to them only in parables the meaning of which he expounded to his disciples after the crowds had dispersed.

Therefore I speak to them in parables: because they seeing, see not, and hearing, they hear not, neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias which saith, By hearing ye shall hear and shall not understand, and seeing ye shall see and shall not perceive; For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their hearts, and should be converted, and I should heal them. But blessed are your eyes, for they see; and your ears, for they hear.

The words 'Who hath ears to hear, let him hear', resounded through the gospels. In one form or another they are repeated nine times in the Synoptic gospels and eight times in Revelation.

It has been said that in the darkest days of the Church's history there were many who, in order to protect themselves from persecution, sought the truth under the guise of some external calling. As an example of such a body of men may be mentioned the ecclesiastical

## THE CHURCH

alchemists. Alchemy was an extremely ancient science which for upwards of seventeen hundred years exerted its influence upon thought, not only in Europe, but in Egypt, Arabia, Persia and China. Although it is said to have formed part of the traditional knowledge of the Egyptian priesthood, it was probably an importation into Egypt from abroad. Alchemy certainly existed in China prior to this era. It also flourished amongst the Arabs and in Greece, where it was always referred to either as 'the work', or as 'The Divine and Sacred Art'. Although externally it appeared to be a branch of metallurgy, and was popularly regarded as a search for gold, the more important part of the true alchemist's research was spiritual and hidden. This is evident from the clear distinction that is drawn in all alchemical writings between the exoteric alchemy that was visible to the world and the esoteric alchemy that was revealed only to chosen adepts. Although to the world, the alchemist appeared to be engaged only in the transmutation of baser metals into gold, he was in reality striving for an inner transmutation of the spirit. He was therefore essentially a religious man

The central doctrine of the alchemists was the unity of all things, a doctrine that was engraved on the emerald tablets of the great alchemical leader, Hermes Trismegistus, in the saying 'As above so below'. The laws that ruled the material world also ruled the world of the spirit. The alchemists believed that throughout the whole universe there existed a general movement of the baser towards the finer, and it was his work to find how best this movement could be assisted. Arnold of Villanova explained the meaning of the search for the philosopher's stone in the following words:

There abides in Nature a certain pure matter, which being discovered and brought to perfection converts to itself proportionately all imperfect bodies that it touches

That the vital part of the alchemists' work was the inner transformation of the spirit rather than the conversion of lead into gold, is shown by the following quotations.

Out of other things, thou wilt never make one unless first the one arises out of thyself. (ABBOT TRITHEMIUS, *circa* A.D. 1500.)

In order to acquire the golden understanding (Aurea appre-

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

hensio), a man must open wide the eyes of the spirit, and of the soul, and contemplate and recognize things with the help of the inner light that God has kindled from the beginning in nature and in our hearts.

Know that thou canst not possess 'the science' if thou dost not cleanse thy mind through God, by which is meant that thou purgest thine heart from all corruption (ALFEDIUS.)

To a modern reader whose mind draws a clear distinction between matter and spirit, alchemical writings are apt to appear confused and meaningless. It must be remembered, however, that no such distinction as 'matter and spirit' existed for the alchemist. For him there was instead an intermediate realm that lay between matter and spirit, a realm of subtle bodies, to which a psychic as well as a physical manifestation was suited. Whereas to us there appears to exist an incongruity between the alchemist's preoccupation with retorts and crucibles and his search for spiritual change, for the alchemist there was no such incongruity. His external work was a symbol of his inner work, but at the same time it was more than a symbol. Unity existed in everything, and the same laws ruled everywhere.

Alchemy, therefore, provided a cloak for those Christians who could no longer believe in the validity of the Church's teaching and sought to find truth in intimate spiritual experience. There also existed other societies and sects who continued their search in secret lest their heresies should be discovered and punished. However corrupt the Church might be there were always men who, in secret, and as best they could, followed the teaching of Christ. The level of Christianity within the Church is as variable as is the level of Christianity outside of the Church.

## CHAPTER XVI

### MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

THE birthplace of religious feeling is in the solitude of the soul. It was on the desolate peak of Sinai that Moses saw God. It was under the Bodhi tree on a hilltop that Buddha found enlightenment. It was in the wilderness of Judea, in the stillness of prayer and meditation, that Christ prepared himself for his mission to mankind. Walt Whitman has expressed this idea with striking vehemence.

I should say indeed that only in the perfect uncontamination and solitariness of individuality may the spirituality of religion positively come forth at all. Only here, and on such terms, the meditation, the devout ecstasy, the soaring flight. Only here communion with the mysteries, the eternal problems, Whence, Whither? Alone, and identity, and the mood — and the soul emerges, and all statements, churches, sermons, melt away like vapours. Alone, and silent thoughts, and awe, and aspiration — and there the interior consciousness like a hitherto unseen inscription, in magic ink, beams out its wondrous line to the sense. Bibles may convey and priests expound, but it is exclusively for the noiseless operations of one's isolated self to enter the pure ether of veneration, reach the divine levels, and commune with the unutterable.

From the earliest times there have been men both within and outside the Christian Church who have shut their ears to the babble of warring creeds, and in the solitude of meditation, and in the unfathomable depths of the soul, have found the truth they sought. Men who seek what Whitman terms the 'interior consciousness' are called mystics, a term that is generally used with a certain flavour of indulgence by the charitable rationalists, and with scorn by those who are not charitable.

Why is mysticism such an ill-favoured word? Mainly because the rationalist regards mysticism as a method of seeing things through a

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

golden and sentimental haze, things that can be seen much more clearly and with a greater sense of proportion by the intellect. Although Kant's view that our reasoning can never tear aside the veil that hides the noumenal from the phenomenal world, is widely accepted, it is accepted only theoretically. Men still continue to reason and speculate about the mysteries of existence, theologians still seek to confine God within their human formulae, and to reduce him to the span of their narrow understanding. Words are strung to words, theories piled on theories, and from such activity has grown up a vast intellectual structure of theology, which bears as much, or as little, relation to truth as do the speculations of a savage concerning the nature of the universe coincide with reality. In the savage's view of the universe there is undoubtedly an element of truth, but we accept the picture that he has painted as we accept the crude unskilled drawings of a child. There is no need to quarrel with what he has drawn, and there is also no need to take it seriously.

But is there no better method of seeing spiritual truths than that of peering through the peephole of the intellect? Kant, Spinoza, Schopenhauer, Bergson and many other philosophers believe that there is such a method

The teaching of mysticism [says Schopenhauer] tends towards the giving of a direct sense of what perceptions, concepts and all knowledge in general are incapable of attaining

And what these philosophers have postulated, the mystics have confirmed. Things of the spirit are seen by the eyes of the spirit. The noumenal world is revealed only to the noumenal man. A study of the classic type of mystical experience reveals an astonishing uniformity of view, a uniformity that embraces all differences of race and of clime, and reaches across the centuries. Here is a Church in which there is no cleavage into sects, each of which claims a monopoly of truth, but a Church universal in which Christians, Buddhists, Sufis and all other religious men can worship without fear of disagreement. Pierre Nicole realized this fact very clearly when he reproached the Christian mystics of his time with having discarded the forms of thought that were intrinsically Catholic. The word 'catholic' might mean universal,

## MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

but there was a limit to the universality permitted to members of the Roman Catholic Church.

They do not know God as Christians and Catholics [he wrote] but in a way equally suitable for Mohammedans, Deists and the majority of heretics. For what does this knowledge of God come to ultimately? A confused and indistinct idea of an omnipresent God. But to know this it is not necessary either to be a Catholic, or a Christian.

Small wonder that a staunch member of the Holy Roman Church was disquieted!

There are critics who would deny the truth of the statement that mysticism is a universal religion. They would say that Western differs from Eastern mysticism in being more positive and creative, the Christian mystic affirming the reality of the world and the meaningfulness of life, and the Eastern mystic denying them. But, as Radhakrishnan points out, it is difficult to maintain this thesis in the face of Buddha's intense pity and sympathy for every form of sentient life. Pity, and desire to succour one's fellows, cannot be reconciled with a complete negation of the reality of life. Moreover, the whole of Christ's Sermon on the Mount can be looked upon as a negation of ordinary life.

It is a proclamation of unworldliness in its extremest form. It is the poor, or those who have no care at all for wealth, those whose concessiveness or submissiveness to injustice knows no limit, and who take up this burden of misery most readily, who are to enjoy the blessings of the kingdom. These negative characteristics — expressing an extreme renunciation of the world and all its normal desires — are constantly emphasized (BISHOP GORE.)

The contrast is not between Western and Eastern mysticism, but between a religious and a self-sufficient humanist outlook. It is humanism that affirms the importance of life, and religion that discounts it. While religion is taken more seriously in the East, an intensely active humanism is predominant in the West. All religions are otherworldly. Hinduism, like Christianity, regards the world merely as a training ground, a means of attaining a higher state.

In spite of the uniformity that is found in the mystical experiences of

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

men and women of all creeds and nations, grave doubt is generally expressed concerning the validity of knowledge so obtained.

The real belief of the Brahmins [says Schweitzer, with what seems to be a note of surprise in his voice] is that man does not attain to union with Brahman by means of any achievement of his natural power of gaining knowledge, but solely by quitting the world of the senses, in a state of ecstasy, and thus learning the reality of pure being.

Precisely so, but this is not merely the real belief of the Brahmin, but of every mystic, brahminical or otherwise. St. Ignatius, St. John of the Cross, St. Teresa, Jacob Boehme and a long line of Christian mystics are at one with the Brahmin in this. What Schweitzer regards as unusual or supernatural is actually normal, although few of us can attain this level of normality.

Ecstasy, like mysticism, is a word which has been used to cover a multitude of states, ranging from hysteria to the raptures of Plotinus and Boehme. All experiences of the divine are ecstatic, but all ecstasies cannot be regarded as being experiences of the divine. The excited outbursts of a neurasthenic have no more in common with the bliss of religious ecstasy than the babbling of a drunkard has with the teaching of Buddha. But if we refuse to believe that a flash of genius in a great artist is a sign of mental instability, we must also refuse to believe that the revelations vouchsafed to Plotinus were symptoms of mental decay. Indeed, if we truly regarded ecstatic visions as necessarily pathological, it were best to convert all churches into museums, and, like the Nazis, burn all the books that we fail to understand. All religions are based on revelation and revelation is imparted in a state of ecstasy.

At the same time a critical attitude must be maintained to mystical writings. In Chapter II the pathological theory of mystical experience was discussed and it was agreed that some mystical writings were definitely of a pathological nature. There is also a theory that the knowledge given in ecstasy is simply some concept, which, having long formed a subject for reflection, suddenly assumes the power of hallucination, taking complete possession of the subject, so that his state is changed from one of activity to passivity. The object towards

## MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

which the former meditation was directed is freed from the check imposed on it by sensations and concepts, so that it becomes endowed with irresistible force, forming a sort of *idée fixe*. This theory of the nature of revelation is supported by Ribot and Murisier. Whilst it may explain the experiences of some of the lesser mystics, it cannot explain that of all. The great mystics always adopted a critical attitude towards their experiences, and were often alarmed in case they should prove to be the temptations of the devil. Strict warnings were issued to all aspiring religious by their spiritual directors in regard to visions and supernatural experiences. They were advised to regard these generally as being designs of the tempter to lead them astray into confusion and spiritual pride. The special danger to which the mystics were exposed was the temptation to clutch at the fruition of the spiritual union before they had gone through the toilsome preparatory disciplining of the will and the intellect. As a result of this impatience the intellect might be sacrificed and be excluded from the religious life. In such cases there would be no check upon superstitious beliefs, upon fantasy and upon such excesses of emotionalism as are sometimes witnessed in religious revivals. Walter Hilton, Canon of Thurgarton, who died in 1396, expressed the opinion that violent emotional fervours did not belong to a high state, but were characteristic, rather, of beginners, 'who for the littleness and weakness of their souls cannot bear the smallest touch of God' He also warned others to be wary of the strange physical and psychical phenomena which sometimes accompany higher states, such as sights and sounds and odours, a sensation of burning heat in the breast, voices and apparitions of various kinds. He added that although he did not doubt that such things really take place, it was by no means easy to determine whether they were sent by God or were a snare laid by the devil. The best test according to Hilton was to ask whether they tended to distract the mind from devotions and from good actions or to encourage these. If they did act as a distraction it must be concluded that they were sent by the Evil One. The validity of the vision was only to be known by its fruits.

That the great mystics carefully scrutinized their emotional experiences is shown by the detailed analysis they made of them.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

St. Teresa, for example, subdivides the mystical states into which she passed into various 'mansions'. She also made a distinction between what she called a 'spiritual espousal' and a 'spiritual marriage'. In Hilton's *Scale of Perfection* he describes the various steps in the ladder of contemplation by means of which the divine vision is reached. The first step is knowledge of the facts of religion, the second, mere feeling without light in the understanding. When in this middle state the aspirant 'cannot tell what it is, but he feeleth it is well, for it is a gift of God'. The third and final step was a combination of knowledge with perfect love. In this state was fulfilled what St. Paul says to the Corinthians: 'He that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit.' The true mystic, therefore, is not merely content with a blind emotional fervour, but observes the steps by which he reaches this as carefully as a psychologist notes his inner reactions

What is above all essential to the mystic is that he should attain the childlike attitude to truth that Christ counselled his disciples to assume if they wished to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. It was the exact opposite of that adopted by the priests, and the Pharisees, who approached everything with preconceived views and with complete confidence in the infallibility of their subjective opinions. Mysticism entails the giving up of all egoism, of all personal desires and hopes, and of all personal views and imaginings, so that that which is not personal may be seen with the eyes of the spirit.

Now we have received not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely given us of God. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Spirit teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the spirit of God; For they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. (1 Corinthians 12, 12-14).

The best way of understanding the method of the mystic is to study the life of one of them, and to note what he has to say about his experiences. No better subject for such a study could be found than Jacob Boehme, if for no other reason than that he was a plain unpretentious man, who describes his experiences in the simplest possible

## MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

language. Boehme had no thesis that he wished to prove, laid no claim to any superiority, and took no credit for what he had seen.

I am not come to this meaning, [he writes] to this work and knowledge, through my own reason, or through my own will and purpose, neither have I sought this knowledge, nor so much as know anything concerning it. I sought only for the heart of God, therein to hide myself from the temptations of the devil.

He was born in the village of Alt Seidenberg, close to the Bohemian border, in 1575. His parents being poor, he was put to mind the cattle, and it was in the solitude of the fields that he had his first spiritual experience. Because he was not robust enough to be a labourer, he was afterwards apprenticed to a bootmaker, eventually becoming a master of his craft. At the age of twenty-five, he married a butcher's daughter, and set up a household of his own. A year later he experienced another ecstasy that altered the course of his life. This was followed soon afterwards by a third and still more memorable illumination that clarified for him much that he had not previously understood.

What Boehme had seen he could not keep to himself, and ill-equipped as he was in other respects for such a task, he published a book, entitled *Aurora*. This work was read by a pastor of the local Lutheran church, one Gregorius Richter, and the reading of it so infuriated him that he went straight off to the city council to demand that Boehme should be banished from the neighbourhood. This the council agreed to do, but later, realizing that Boehme had an excellent reputation, and had attended church regularly, it allowed him to return on condition that he wrote no more books.

But Boehme's business had suffered badly from the local scandal, and, unable to carry it on, he took a job as travelling salesman in woollen gloves. No longer able to remain silent, he published another book. Gregorius Richter denounced him from the pulpit, and a scurrilous campaign was launched against him. 'His writings smell overmuch of cobbler's pitch' 'Will you have the words of Jesus Christ, or the words of a shoemaker?' yelled his opponents, the followers of One who had once been a carpenter. Boehme's only reply was 'Not I, the I that I am, know these things, but God knows

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

them in me'. It is gratifying that not all were blind to the quiet dignity in Boehme, and certain influential people, including eminent dignitaries of the Church, treated him with consideration and respect. He died in 1624, at the age of forty-nine

Whatever his views of mystical states, or of higher levels of consciousness may be, no one can read Boehme's books without feeling that herein lies some mystery. How could a tender of cattle, a cobbler and a pedlar of woollen gloves, contrive to write them? Boehme had doubtless had some elementary education and had listened to the preaching of the Reverend Gregorius Richter, but this could not have enabled him to attain the profound and tranquil wisdom of the world's greatest religious leaders. Gregorius Richter knew nothing about the unity of all, the Brahman that pervades everything, the identification of man with his lower being, and the necessity for losing all in order that one might attain all. Everyone must explain the enigma of Jacob Boehme's books as best he can, but however varied the explanation may be, all will agree that some explanation is necessary

The solution that Boehme himself offers is that which he gave to his opponents 'Not I, the I that I am, know these things, but God knows them in me', or which he offers in the preface to his best-known book, *The Signature of All Things*

This is the wisdom that dwells in nothing, and yet possesses all things, and the humble resigned soul is its playfellow; this is the divine alloquy, the inspiration of the Almighty, the breath of God, the holy unction, which sanctifies the soul to be the temple of the Holy Spirit, which instructs aright in all things

In order to explain how a man may come into direct contact with truth, Boehme imagines a dialogue between a disciple and his master. As no description of the general drift of this dialogue can possess the value of Boehme's own words, the beginning of it is appended:

The disciple said to his master: Sir, how may I come to the supersensual life, so that I may see God, and may hear God speak?

The master answered and said Son, when thou canst throw thyself into That, where no creature dwelleth, though it be but for a moment, then thou hearest what God speaketh.

## MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

*Disciple.* Is that where no creature dwelleth near at hand; or is it afar off?

*Master.* It is in thee. And if thou canst, my son, for a while but cease from all thy thinking and willing, then thou shalt hear the unspeakable words of God.

*Disciple.* How can I hear him speak, when I stand still from thinking and willing?

*Master.* When thou standest still from the thinking of self, and the willing of self; 'When both thy intellect and will are quiet, and passive to the impressions of the Eternal Word and Spirit; and when thy soul is winged up, and above that which is temporal, the outward senses, and the imagination being locked up by holy abstraction', then the eternal hearing, seeing and speaking will be revealed in thee; and so God heareth 'and seeth through thee', being now the organ of his Spirit; and so God speaketh in thee and whispereth to thy spirit, and thy spirit heareth his voice. Blessed art thou therefore if that thou canst stand still from self-thinking and self-willing, and canst stop the wheel of thy imagination and senses, forasmuch as hereby thou mayest arrive at length to see the great salvation of God, being made capable of all manner of divine sensations and heavenly communications. Since it is nought indeed but thine own hearing and willing that do hinder thee, so that thou dost not see and hear God.

*Disciple.* But wherewith shall I hear and see God, forasmuch as he is above nature and creature?

*Master.* Son, when thou art quiet and silent, then art thou as God was before nature and creature, thou art that which God then was; thou art that whereof he made thy nature and creature; Then thou hearest and seest even with that wherewith God himself saw and heard in thee, before ever thine own willing or thine own seeing began.

*Disciple.* What now hinders or keeps me back, so that I cannot come to that, wherewith God is to be seen and heard?

*Master.* Nothing truly but thine own willing, hearing, and seeing do keep thee back from it, and do hinder thee from coming to this supersensual state. And it is because thou strivest so against that, out of which thou thyself art descended and derived, that thou thus breakest thyself off, with thine own willing, from God's willing, and with thy own seeing from God's seeing. In as much

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

as in thine own understanding thou dost understand but in and according to this thine own willing, as the same stands divided from the divine will. This thy willing moreover stops thy hearing, and maketh thee deaf towards God, through thy own thinking upon terrestrial things, and thy attending to that which is without thee; and so it brings thee into a ground, where thou art laid hold on and captivated in nature. And having brought thee hither, it overshadows thee with that which thou willest; it binds thee with thine own chains and it keeps thee in thine own dark prison which thou makest for thyself; so that thou canst not go out thence, or come to that state which is supernatural and supersensual.

The Christian mystic who is probably the best known to English readers is John Yepes, more familiar under the name of St. John of the Cross, the author of *The Dark Night of the Soul*. Born in 1542, he was educated by the Jesuits and became a Carmelite friar at Medina. His illumination followed a period of intense suffering, not only spiritual but also physical, for he was imprisoned for the infringement of some ecclesiastical ordinance. Butler, in *The Lives of the Saints*, records that Yepes passed through a period of

interior trouble of mind, scruples, and a dislike of spiritual exercises . . . The devils assaulted him with violent temptations . . . The most terrible of all these pains was that of scrupulosity, and interior desolation in which he seemed to see Hell open ready to swallow him up . . . After some time certain rays of light, comfort and divine sweetness scattered these mists, and translated the soul of the servant of God into a paradise of interior delights and heavenly sweetness,

There then followed another period of depression, brought to an end by a still greater illumination and happiness.

After his experience of higher states St. John of the Cross wrote several books with the object of conveying to others a knowledge of the new life that had come to him. The following passages have been selected from his two chief works, *Ascent of Mount Carmel* and *The Dark Night of the Soul*.

The more the soul strives to become blind and annihilated as to all interior and exterior things, the more it will be filled with faith and love and hope. But this love at times is neither comprehended

## MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

nor felt, because it does not establish itself in the senses with tenderness, but in the soul with fortitude, with greater courage and resolution than before, though it sometimes overflows into the senses, and shows itself tender and gentle. In order, then, to attain to this love, joy and delight which visions effect, it is necessary that the soul should have fortitude and be fortified, so as to abide willingly in emptiness and darkness, and to lay the foundation of its love and delight on what it neither sees nor feels, on what it cannot see nor feel — namely, on God incomprehensible and supreme. Our way to Him is therefore, of necessity, in self-denial . . . That soul, therefore, has greater communion with God which is most advanced in love — that is, whose will is most conformable to the will of God . . . For which cause, therefore, as I have already explained, the more the soul cleaves to created things, relying on its own strength, by habit and inclination, the less is it disposed for this union, because it does not completely resign itself into the hands of God, that He may transform it supernaturally.

Knowledge of pure truth requires for its proper explanation that God should hold the hand and wield the pen of the writer . . . This kind of vision is not the same with the intellectual visions of bodily things . . . It is most like to the spirit of prophecy . In so far as this becomes pure contemplation the soul sees clearly that it cannot describe it otherwise than in general terms, which the abundance of delight and happiness forces from it. And though at times when this knowledge is vouchsafed to the soul, words are uttered, yet the soul knows full well that it has in no wise expressed what it felt, because it is conscious that there are no words of adequate significance. This divine knowledge concerning God never relates to particular things . . . It is only a soul in union with God, that is capable of this profound loving knowledge, for it is itself that union . . . Such is the sweetness of deep delight of these touches of God, that one of them is more than a recompense for all the sufferings of this life, however great their number.

Amongst the spiritual maxims of St John of the Cross there appears the following poem:

I entered, but I knew not where, and there I stood not knowing,  
all science transcending.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

I knew not where I entered, for when I stood within, not knowing where I was, I heard great things. What I heard I will not tell; I was there as one who knew not, all science transcending.

Of peace and devotion, the knowledge was perfect, in solitude profound; the right was clear, but so secret was it, that I stood babbling, all science transcending.

I stood enraptured in ecstasy, beside myself, and in my every sense, no sense remained. My spirit was endowed with understanding, understanding nought, all science transcending.

The higher I ascended, the less I understood. It is the dark cloud illumining the night. Therefore, he who understands knows nothing, ever all science transcending.

He who really ascends so high, annihilates himself, and all his previous knowledge seems ever less and less; his knowledge so increases, that he knoweth nothing, all science transcending.

This knowing that knows nothing is so potent in its might that the prudent in their reasoning never can defeat it; for their wisdom never reaches to the understanding that understandeth nothing, all science transcending.

This sovereign wisdom is of an excellence so high that no faculty nor science can ever unto it attain. He who shall overcome himself by the knowledge which knows nothing, will always rise, all science transcending.

And if you would listen, this sovereign wisdom doth consist in a sense profound of the essence of God; it is an act of His compassion to leave us naught understanding, all science transcending.

The multiplication of extracts from the writings of Christian mystics is unnecessary, for all convey the same message. There is a monotony in mystical literature, a monotony from which there can be no escape when all writers express the same ideas, and the only novelty lies in certain superficial differences of language. It would indeed be possible to shorten the messages of all the mystics to those three words of the Vedāntist, *Tat Twam Asi*, Thou art That. The description of the 'That' alone is variable. To the Platonist, it is the eternal Idea, to the Hindu, it is Brahman, to the Buddhist, it is Purusha; and to the Sufi and the Christian, it is God.

The discovery that in man there is a part of the Divine Being brings with it certain implications. The first question that naturally

## MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

arises is: if there be in man a part of the Divine, why has he become so estranged from it that he has even forgotten its presence? To this question, the Buddhist replies in terms of nescience, and the Christian in terms of sin. Both of them add, as a corollary, that salvation can only come when man recognizes the divine principle in himself and, for the sake of that which is indestructible and eternal, sacrifices that which is destructible and temporary. This is the whole of religion, and it is this truth that is experienced in a mystical state of consciousness, a state that is associated with a sense of conviction and with an intensity of feeling that are unknown under ordinary conditions. Walt Whitman expresses the emotional tone of mystical knowledge in the following lines:

Swiftly arose and spread around me the peace and joy and knowledge that pass all the art and argument of the earth,

And I know that the hand of God is the elder hand of my own.

And I know that the Spirit of God is the eldest brother of my own.

And that all the men ever born are also my brothers, and the women my sisters and lovers.

And that a kelson of creation is love.

The question that will immediately be asked is. What guarantee have we that knowledge so obtained is of any objective value? This subject has already been discussed and we will here content ourselves with referring to the views expressed by William James in *Varieties of Religious Experience*. After having laid stress on the unanimity found amongst the mystics, he makes the suggestion that an impartial science of religion should be asked 'to sift out from amidst the discrepancies a common body of doctrine, which she might formulate in terms to which physical science need not object'. To the writer the interposition of an impartial science of religion would appear to be as unnecessary as formulation in terms to which physical science need not object. The agreement amongst religious mystics is apparent to all, and there is nothing in their views to which science need object. It is only psychology and philosophy that are concerned with the formulations of the mystics. Psychologists have, as a whole, paid little attention to the all-important subject of consciousness, but on

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

*a priori* grounds, psychologists would agree that since there are levels of consciousness below that at which we normally live, so also is it reasonable to suppose that there exist levels above it. No one will dispute that the objective value of an experience in wakefulness is greater than that of an experience in sleep. Consequently it must be supposed that the objective value of experiences on a still higher level is increased. And when we come to refer the matter to the philosophers we find that many of them have already experienced the value of higher states of consciousness, so that the philosophers need have no objection to the formulations of the mystics. Who can read the works of writers such as Spinoza, Swedenborg and Schopenhauer without being convinced that they have derived their philosophy in part from that knowledge, 'that passes all the art and argument of the earth'?

A second question that is likely to be asked is: If higher states of consciousness exist from which knowledge of great objective value can be obtained, why is it that so few of us have experienced them? This question also admits of an answer. Even a cursory perusal of mystical literature of the religious kind reveals the fact that mystical experience is of an intensely emotional character. In every case we find that the religious mystic has passed through a period of acute spiritual suffering. The language in which he portrays this period of the dark night of the soul is as extravagant as that which he uses to describe the subsequent illumination. Usually the struggle between the higher and lower parts of his nature appears to him in the guise of a fight between angels and devils. It is not for him merely an incident, but a grim battle for survival, a battle that becomes so fierce that he is often brought to a state of physical exhaustion. Then, suddenly, and unexpectedly, when keyed up to an intensity of feeling that few people have ever reached, comes the release and the illumination. Who amongst us have any experience of being keyed up to such a high emotional pitch as this? We have plodded along our accustomed road, taking pleasure in our trivial achievements, disgruntled by our disappointments, and seeking the comfortable middle way of compromise. We have continued to live in a monotonous greyness, knowing nothing of the darkness of the soul's night, or of the bright-

## MYSTICAL CHRISTIANITY

ness of its day. Why then should we wonder that the ecstasy of the religious mystic has been denied to us, and that we have no experience of the levels of consciousness that he has reached?

For the business of living we are equipped well enough as we are. Only if we seek new knowledge beyond the range of the senses is it necessary to make these arduous flights into the empyrean. To most of us, it seems better that we should remain on the ground, fulfilling our domestic tasks and listening to the messages brought to us by bolder spirits, but not sharing their experience. An inglorious lot, perhaps, but associated with certain comforts. Moreover, things have been made easy for us; the stern figure of Christ has become softened by time, his doctrines have been watered down, and the Church has come to an understanding with the world. Christianity has for most of us become a comfortable religion, and suited to our needs. *There is no necessity for us to become religious mystics.*

## CHAPTER XVII

### 'IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE...'

THIS survey of man from the points of view of biology, psychology, Western and Eastern philosophy, and of religion, incomplete though it be, enables us to arrive at certain conclusions. From the point of view of science we see man as an elaborate piece of mechanism, his actions determined by his endocrine glands, his central nervous system, his hereditary endowments and his environment. From philosophy we learn that his capacity for knowledge is strictly limited, so that by means of the sense organs alone he can never know reality. This is confirmed by Eastern philosophy, but a new idea is added. Man, as he is, can see no more and do no more, but by right effort and right method, he can gain new powers, understand more and achieve more. Finally we have the confirmation of this idea by religion. Whatever may be the difference in their creed, whatever may be the variations in their philosophy, all religions without exception contain this idea of the possibility of change, so that a man may become other than he is. From the point of view of all religions man is a being in whom are lying latent higher powers.

This division of man into lower and higher components is differently expressed in the various psychological, philosophical and religious systems that we have studied. Kant's division is between *homo sensibilis* and *homo noumenalis*, between the man whose knowledge is limited by his sense perceptions and the transcendental man who can by direct apprehension know reality. For Bergson the dividing line is drawn between the intellect and what he calls 'intuition'. Intellect is the faculty that allows us to make artificial cuts across the living flow of reality, so as to view separate states of consciousness, which persist only until they are succeeded by other states. Only by intuition can the flow of becoming that constitutes life be grasped. Intuition for Bergson is itself part of the *élan vital*, the creative impulse that is the

‘IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE . . .’

reality behind all phenomena. And in holding this view of the intellect we feel that Bergson is at one with Samkara, who looked upon the mind as an instrument of limited utility, an instrument that is mainly of service in the practical field of action. It is the bull’s-eye lantern that allows us to concentrate illumination on one particular spot at one particular moment of time, so that we may be enabled to react most appropriately. The intellect, therefore, belongs to that lower self of the senses which forms part of the material universe. It is to *purusha*, intuition, the transcendental self, that is to say to the spiritual side of his nature that a man must turn if he would see more and become more. This higher Self, according to Samkara, is ‘undifferenced consciousness’ that can never be the result of, but is itself the cause of, the lower self. This consciousness is not the finite consciousness, but is a fragment of the fundamental consciousness, the reality behind all creation. Only when man ceases to identify himself with the life of the senses and the intellect, and recognizes that he is part of the underlying divine basis of the cosmos, can he gain new knowledge and new powers.

In no Western philosophy is the difference between man as he is and man as he might become more strongly proclaimed than in that of Nietzsche. This is the theme that underlies the whole of that much misunderstood work *Thus Spake Zarathustra*, the idea of the Superman.

*I teach you the Superman.* Man is a thing to be surmounted. What have you done to surmount him?

All beings hitherto have created something above themselves: will ye be the ebb of this great tide and rather revert to the beast than surmount man?

What is the ape to man? A jest or a thing of shame. So shall man be to Superman — a jest or a thing of shame.

Ye have trod the way from worm to man, and much in you is yet worm. Once were ye apes, and even yet man is more ape than any ape.

But he that is wisest amongst you is but a discord, a hybrid of plant and ghost. But do I bid you become either ghosts or plants?

Behold I teach you the Superman!

The Superman is the meaning of the earth. Let your will say: the Superman *shall be* the meaning of the earth.

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

What Nietzsche did not understand was that his philosophy of the Superman was strictly in line with the religious teaching of Christ and Buddha, that in each of us there is something of the divine to which we must return if we are to become other than we are.

In *A New Model of the Universe*, P. D. Ouspensky states that a grain of corn was a very important symbol in the ancient Mysteries of Egypt and of Greece.

In the Eleusinian Mysteries every candidate for initiation carried in a particular procession a grain of wheat in a tiny earthenware bowl. The secret that was revealed to a man at the initiation was contained in the idea that man could die simply as a grain, or could rise again into some other life. This was the principal idea of the Mysteries, which was expressed by many different symbols.

Christ and Buddha made use of the same symbol, saying that a grain must be cast into the ground, and as a grain must die, in order that a shoot should live. Christ's words were misunderstood by many who followed him and for the idea of regeneration in *this* life was substituted that of regeneration in some future life beyond the grave. But this was not the meaning originally attached to the idea of regeneration, or transmutation; it was an emendation that came from the desire to find compensations for disappointment in this life in a glorious resurrection after death. In spite of Christ's insistence that the Kingdom of Heaven was within, the Early Christians preferred the idea that their Lord would soon reappear to found the Kingdom of Heaven on earth later, when they were disappointed in this, they put their hopes in a heaven beyond the grave, where they would enjoy the fruits of their work upon earth. Yet Christ's talk with Nicodemus shows clearly that when he spoke of the necessity of a man being born again before he could enter the Kingdom of Heaven, he was not referring to some future existence, but to this life.

Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

Except a man be born of water and the spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God.

That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit. (St. John, iii, 3, 5, 6.)

## IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE . . .

So much emphasis is placed on the idea of death on one plane and rebirth on another in the teaching of Gautama that the term 'twice born' is attached to all higher levels of humanity. Those who have attained enlightenment have deliberately sacrificed their personalities for the sake of higher capacities; they have died that they might live. The words used by Christ to his disciples might easily have been used by Buddha.

If any man will come after me, let him deny himself and take up his cross and follow me. For whosoever shall save his life shall lose it, and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall find it. (Matthew xvi, 24-25.)

To be a follower of Christ, or a follower of the Eightfold Path, the same requirement was necessary, that a man should sacrifice his personality in order that the higher part of him might live. By personality should be implied all that a man commonly thinks of as himself, his ambitions, his personal theories and opinions, his prejudices, his desires and his aversions, his ideas about himself, his feeling of importance, his fantasies, his day-dreams, as well as much in himself to which he is oblivious. According to all religious systems these characteristics, which are purely subjective, must stand in the way of the apprehension of that which is objective.

It should be noted that the Buddhist stresses the importance of sacrificing personal feelings, aspirations and dreams in order that higher states and higher knowledge may be attained. A similar teaching exists in the other Eastern religions and philosophies. Yet there are writers who express the opinion that all mystical experiences are but dream experiences. In their view a mystic is one who has rendered himself highly suggestible by means of some form of self-hypnosis. In this state of self-induced sleep the creations of his own imagination are liberated from lower levels of consciousness and, rising to the surface, speak to him with all the authority of objective phenomena. Instead of being more awake the mystic is more asleep, instead of seeing more objectively he is seeing more subjectively. Face to face with his own dreams, and listening to his own thoughts invested with a spurious authority, he is easily hoodwinked. Arthur Waley appears to take this view. In the appendix to his translation of the *Tao Te King*

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

he writes: 'That the Chinese Quietist practised some form of self-hypnosis no one familiar both with the Yoga literature of India (whether Hindu or Buddhist) and with Taoism would, I think, be likely to dispute.' To this writer and those who share his opinion (according to him, the majority of educated men) all Eastern religions would appear to be based on nothing more substantial than fantasy. To them Christ, Buddha, Lao Tze and Zoroaster are but great dreamers, men who 'practised 'some form of self-hypnosis'. They have no message for humanity, for their teaching, being founded on these dreams, has no connection with reality.

The difficulties in the way of accepting this view of what in this book has been termed higher levels of thought, seem to be insurmountable, however temptingly scientific it may at first sight appear to be. If self-hypnosis be the aim of the yogis, why this scientific division of their study into the five branches of yoga, each of which complements and fortifies the other, and why their insistence on the need for direct instruction by a teacher? If deeper sleep is the goal of the Buddhist, what need is there for the cultivation of greater awareness and for the arduous training of the attention and the memory? Would not these exercises be more likely to banish sleep than to induce it? If self-hypnosis is all that is required why embark on all this unnecessary preliminary training? Would it not be better for a disciple merely to seat himself in a comfortable chair and gaze at a fixed point of light, thus inducing a sleepy state? No *guru* is needed for this simple procedure, or if help be required, would it not be more profitable to enlist the help of a skilled hypnotist? Hypnosis is hypnosis, whether it be induced from without or attained from within. A scholar's knowledge of the Chinese language is not all the equipment that is necessary for the understanding of the *Tao Te King* and works of a similar nature.

Thus, then, is the great difference between the new and the old psychological systems. Modern psychology regards man as a finished product, something that can never become anything more than it is. The only difference between one man and another is a difference in degree, one being cleverer than another, one more emotional than another, and one better adjusted to life and less handicapped by illusions and inhibitions. By education a man may become cleverer,

### IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE . . .'

and by suitable treatment he may be freed from many of his illusions and inhibitions, but essentially he remains the same man. That is all that it is possible to do in the way of changing humanity. The older psychological systems that were closely allied to religious teachings looked upon a man quite differently. To these systems he was an unfinished product, a seed that could either grow into a plant, or else remain with his higher potentialities completely undeveloped. Not that this growth, or change, could be effected easily or brought about by any outside agency. On the contrary, the purpose of the teaching and methods of these systems was to bring about this change.

The differences in the new and the old psychology are reflected in the outlook of Western and Eastern thought. Humanism is the religion of the majority of modern intellectuals in Europe and in America, whilst Eastern thought still remains essentially religious. In England most of us accept Christianity as we accept the Bank of England, the Constitution and the King. It is no longer a religion in the true sense of the word, but a national institution to which we can belong without any great demands being made on us for our membership. Occasionally a religious revival sweeps through the country igniting the more combustible members of the community, and then after smouldering for a while, dies away like a fire that has spent its force. But it is purely a temporary disturbance that leaves behind it no permanent effects.

But because religious sentiment is a natural instinct in man there are many who are driven to find some outlet for it. Having lost the old faith, they turn eagerly to new ones, and science, psycho-analysis, spiritualism, social reform and nationalism have all in turn acted as substitutes for religion. Of these, nationalism has unfortunately proved to be the most successful. Nations have become mysterious symbols, to the protection of which we rally with all the fervour of religious devotees. As Radhakrishnan points out, the antithesis of Greek and Barbarian, of the Jew and the Gentile, of orthodox and heretic, of Nordic and non-Nordic, have all a strong family likeness. At the present moment the worship of the nation finds its fullest expression in Germany, where the glory of the blood and soil is regarded as the sole purpose of existence, and as justifying the sacrifice of all individual liberty and thought. But it is not in Germany alone that the worship

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

of the blood is to be found. Russia having tired of the worship of a social order that has proved unworkable for ordinary people, now turns back in the direction of nationalism. And in every country, and in varying degrees, we find the worship of the nation acting as a substitute for the worship of God.

There are those who believe that the only hope for the world lies not in the revival of true religion, but in a rationalistic outlook. Religion, they say, whether it takes the form of worship of a personal God, or of a nation, inevitably brings in its wake, chaos and conflict. But man has outgrown the need for religion and it is to his reason that he must turn if he is to find a way out of his present dilemma. Such men believe that the present malaise is merely a temporary indisposition from which man will recover if he allows reason instead of emotion to guide his numerous activities. But does experience justify this hope? No one will deny that the intellect has been given free scope in the affairs of man during several generations. Never has man sought knowledge with greater determination than he has sought it during the last hundred years. The achievements of science have been stupendous, and such as would excite admiration in any mind observing the happenings on the surface of this planet.

These notable victories of the mind, from which so much was hoped, have had for result not so much increased happiness as disquiet, have made for dejection rather than rejoicing. We know more than ever was known and are convinced that we know nothing of what we most wish to know. We distrust more utterly than has ever been mistrusted the very intellect which has achieved so many and so signal triumphs. While our control over nature's energies approaches the miraculous, anarchy reigns in the moral and aesthetic, as well as in the intellectual sphere. (*The Human Situation*, by W. Macneile Dixon.)

Yet all have not lost confidence in the intellect as a means of escaping from the dilemma in which man finds himself. No one is more alarmed at the present state of the world than H. G. Wells, but with child-like faith, he writes:

With a few more cubic inches of brain for the average man, and a score of years added to the span of life, or even with such an

'IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE ...'

economy of mental exertion through simplification as would be equivalent to these extensions, every present difficulty in the human outlook would vanish like a dream.

His friend and one-time fellow-iconoclast in the old days of breaking Victorian idols, G. B. Shaw, is evidently of the same opinion, for a somewhat similar idea forms the theme in his cycle of plays, *Back to Methuselah*. It is strange that writers of such perspicacity should believe that it is only necessary for men to proceed further on the road along which they are travelling in order that they shall find all that they need. Such men still dwell in Voltaire's Age of Reason, in the materialistic world of Darwin and Huxley. External organization, and not internal change, is the panacea that is ever offered us by our thinkers. Alexis Carrel in his chapter on the remaking of man (*Man the Unknown*) advocates the same remedy, a better external organization. Science, which has transformed the material world, must now be set the task of transforming man himself. But what does Carrel mean by science, and what does he imply by man's transformation? The author develops his scheme for world salvation. First, we must get rid of the Cartesian distinction between mind and matter, so that mind may receive as much attention from the scientist as he has previously given to matter. Mental activities must become, for the scientist, as important as physiological reactions. And because it would no longer be possible for any single brain to study and to correlate all the discoveries of science in its widened domain, this work would have to be done by committees housed in highly organized institutions. The governing body, or members of Carrel's High Council,

would dedicate their lives to the contemplation of the economic, sociological, psychological, physiological, and pathological phenomena manifested by the civilized nations and their constitutive individuals. And to that of the development of science and of the influence of its applications to our habits of life and of thought. They would endeavour to discover how modern civilization could mould itself to man without crushing any of his essential qualities. Their silent meditation would protect the inhabitants of the new city from the mechanical inventions which are dangerous for their body and their mind, from the adulteration

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

of thought as well as food, from the whims of the specialists in education, nutrition, morals, sociology, etc., from all progress inspired, not by the needs of the public, but by the greed or the illusions of their inventors.

Nobody will deny the need for protecting people from dangerous inventions, from food adulteration, from poisonous propaganda and from the whims of cranks. Nobody will quarrel with Alexis Carrel for wanting to produce some sort of order in a muddle-headed world, but whilst this may result in the creation of a civilization which makes the transformation of man possible, it cannot bring that about. No amount of external organization can produce a change in the heart and mind of man, for this is an inner change dependent on inner efforts. Moreover, Alexis Carrel fails to tell us who in turn is to protect us from the whims of the specialists on his suggested Grand Council. It may be that in getting rid of the specialist in education, nutrition, morals, sociology, etc., we would fall on even worse days, for the fact that a scientist is a member of a high council is, at the best, only a guarantee that he is a clever scientist. He may even be a brilliant scientist and yet at the same time entirely egotistical and untrustworthy. In any case, Alexis Carrel's new leaders are men like ourselves, and the Bishop of Chichester's Standing Theological and Expert Commission, clever pieces of mechanism, moved by subjective thoughts and feelings. All that he really tells us is that the world is in a muddle, that our social, educational and economic systems are badly in need of overhaul, and that scientists must have a broader outlook, examining men's thoughts as well as their bodies. These facts might almost be regarded as self-evident.

To be strictly fair to him, Alexis Carrel has told us one thing more, namely, that government is a gigantic task which should not be entrusted to men whose chief qualification is a relish for power. It is strange that although no man would think of entrusting a sick horse to the care of someone devoid of all veterinary knowledge, the government of a sick country is handed over willingly to men who have no learnt how to govern themselves. Alexis Carrel is right in insisting that the most difficult of all work should be in the hands of those who are specially fitted to undertake it. The only point at issue is whether

scientists are better equipped for this task than are the successful business men and lawyers who up till now have been mainly responsible for it. Actually, the only men who are fit to govern others are those who stand on a higher level than their fellows, those who have evolved in the sense in which evolution has been used in the previous chapters. Since much of the philosophy outlined in this book comes from the East, it will be of interest to see what Eastern philosophical literature has to say on the subject of government. This subject is dealt with fully in Radhakrishnan's *Eastern Religions and Western Thought*.

According to the Upanishads the chief end of all government is to provide conditions suited to the development of the individual, and by development is meant that the individual 'should find the real self', and 'exceed his apparent outward self'. This ancient teaching is the very antithesis of the totalitarian ideal in which the individual is entirely sacrificed to that non-existent entity, the State, and is thereby deprived of all possibility of spiritual development. Such individual spiritual development can never imply that the individual has no obligations towards his fellows, and consequently towards that social community in which he happens to have been born. On the contrary, he has responsibilities, not only towards his family, but towards his tribe and his nation. What is of paramount importance is that the mutual obligations of the individual and of society should be carefully adjusted. If the group to which he belongs regards itself as absolute and self-sufficient, and demands the total service and life of the individual, it arrogates to itself claims that it does not possess. So also if the individual looks upon himself as the final end of existence, without any reference to the needs of society, he is not only depriving other people of their due, but also jeopardizing his own development. The two principles which must inevitably govern all group life are, the unfettered development of the individual and the healthy growth of society.

Man is not an abstract unit, but an individual that by virtue of his character, capacities and functions, belongs to a definite social group in the community. He must take that position in society for which he happens to be specially fitted. When a fourfold division of society was evolved in ancient India, it was evolved because it was believed that spiritual wisdom, executive ability, skilled production and devoted

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

service were four elements which were indispensable to any social order. The idea of four great human classes was conceived in the interests of human progress, and not primarily in the interest of the individuals who made up those classes. In the period of the Upanishads (1500 B.C. to 600 B.C.) the fourfold classification was into classes and not into castes. Membership of the various classes was not hereditary, and it was possible for a member of one class to marry a member of another, or by his own merit to attain a higher class. At a later date, the substitution of birth for innate qualities as a method of classification, and the conversion of the classes into castes brought about the social crystallization and caste-exclusiveness, the existence of which in India is so much deplored. Individuals no longer fell into their natural places in society, but were thrust there by the accident of birth. A Brahmin was no longer a Brahmin because, by temperament and training, he had been found to be fitted for leadership, but because he happened to be the son of a Brahmin. The whole system became unnatural and in its changed form was fraught with potential abuses. In the original class system it was social duty that was insisted upon, and not personal rights; in the caste system, privilege became more and more important. In the class system the possession of suitable qualities enabled a man who happened to have been born in a lower class to be educated for higher duties in another, so that the son of a slave-girl might ultimately be accepted as a Brahmin.

The four original classes were the Brahmins (the seekers after higher knowledge), the Ksatriyas (the executors), the Vaisyas (the skilled producers and merchants) and the Sudras (the labourers). The function of a Brahmin was to seek knowledge and to teach, and a true Brahmin was said to be one 'who had sensed the deeper Self, and acted out that consciousness'. He was a man who had evolved, not only as regards knowledge, but also as regards character. A Brahmin gave moral guidance, but did not enforce that which he had advised. He had no possessions other than the means of subsistence that the other castes provided for him. The Brahmins, therefore, formed a class of disinterested seekers after truth, supported by society, influencing it, and placed above the corrupting effects of riches and power. They represented the ruling class of philosophers in the ideal republic of Plato.

Whilst it was the business of the Brahmin to lay down certain principles, it was that of the Ksatriyas to devise the means by which these could be put into practice. They were the executives and the rulers, and, like the Brahmins, they were supported by the two lower classes. They were not allowed to teach, or expected to accumulate personal wealth. They were the knights and the just rulers, the men of action and the followers of Karma Yoga. The worshippers of power, the men of brute force, and the selfish tyrants were perversions of this type, and fortunately in the Golden Age of Indian history, were seldom found. The true Ksatriya did not attempt to extend his power. In his 13th Rock Edict, King Asoka, the greatest of the Ksatriyas, caused to be carved these words:

In order that my sons and grandsons should not regard it as their duty to make a new conquest . . . they should take pleasure in patience and gentleness and regard as the only true conquest, the conquest won by piety.

The third class, the Vaisyas, provided for the desire that is innate in humanity, to possess, to enjoy, to give and to take. Those who belonged to this class – and it was a large one – were the men of practical mind engaged in commerce and industry. Though they were allowed to acquire wealth, they were expected to develop human and neighbourly qualities. They co-operated with the Ksatriyas in the maintenance of order, and with the Brahmins in furthering the spiritual welfare of the community, but they were responsible for neither.

Members of the fourth class, the Sudras, found their outlet in work and service. Whilst the seekers after wisdom worked for the pure joy of the search, the ruling class for honour, the craftsmen for the love of their art, the lowest class fulfilled their duties in order to satisfy their primary needs.

Individuals and classes were bound to one another by a feeling of obligation and mutual service. Society expected of each man the performance of his duties, and in turn guaranteed to each sustenance and opportunity for self-expression. The spirit of competition, dear to the heart of the thrusting Westerner, was unknown. But although every man had his fixed place in society, the fourfold scheme was, in the best sense of the word, democratic. In Radhakrishnan's words:

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

Firstly, it insists on the spiritual equality of all men. It assumes that within every human creature there is a self which has the right to grow in its own way, to find itself, and make its life a full and satisfied image and instrument of its being. Secondly, it makes for individuality in the positive sense. Individuality is attained not through an escape from limitations but through the willing acceptance of obligations. It is erroneous to assume that only the aberrant or the anarchical is the true individual. Thirdly, it points out that all work is socially useful and from an economic standpoint equally important. Fourthly, social justice is not a scheme of rights but of opportunities. It is wrong to assume that democracy requires all men to be alike. Society is a pattern of an organism in which different organs play different parts. Excellence is specific and cannot be universal. Equality refers to opportunity and not to capacity. While it recognizes that men are unequal in scale and quality, it insists that every human being shall have the right and the opportunity to contribute to human achievement, as far as his capacity goes. Society must be so organized as to give individuals sufficient scope to exercise their natural energies without being interfered with by others.

It is doubtful whether in the Western world there has ever existed a society based on these principles, for to call such a form of government a hierarchy would be a grave misnomer. The Brahmins were not priests owing a narrow loyalty to some particular church, they did not aspire to temporal power, nor were they rulers. They were purely seekers after spiritual truth, and teachers. Europe has never experienced rule by Brahmins but during the Feudal Age it was governed by Ksatriyas. The Ksatriya class in the West was however hereditary, and uninfluenced by Brahmins. In later times the great families of England took the place of the old feudal barons. Narrow in outlook as they often were, they nevertheless governed the country in accordance with certain traditions of honour, and with a sense of responsibility for the welfare of those who were entrusted to their care. Then, with the rise of industrialism, came a change, and the old governing classes with all their good qualities and with all their bad were swept aside. Industrialism created a new set of values and a new type of ruler. Man ceased to be a human being and became instead an economic unit.

**'IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE . . .'**

Commercial prosperity was the goal towards which all nations strove and progress was measured in terms of dollars and pounds. In the scramble for wealth spiritual values, like all others that had only an indirect relationship to commercial prosperity, waned. In his book, *A Philosophy for Our Times*, C. E. M. Joad refers to the shabby years between the last war and this as the 'stomach and pocket age', and it is a term that aptly describes it. The aim of each nation has been commercial prosperity at the expense, if need be, of its neighbours, the aim of the individual personal comfort and success at the expense, if need be, of his fellows. And to suit the needs of a new age the world selected new rulers from the class of Vaisyas, that is to say, from amongst the merchants and the accumulators of wealth. Commerce now being the national god, it was natural that the help of good business men should be enlisted to organize the nation along sound economic lines. But unfortunately business requires a varying amount of labour, and since it is competitive, it requires cheap labour. Hence all the shoddy make-shifts to which the Vaisyas have had to resort in their attempts to rule their respective nations along sound economic lines. Nor is it surprising that the Sudras, finding themselves to be exploited rather than looked after by the superior classes, have in certain parts of the world revolted, and evolved the rule of the proletariat, in other words, government by the lowest class of all. In the name of liberty the Sudras rise against the tyranny of their oppressors only to establish a new form of slavery. None of the modern theories for the reorganization of society gives the results that are anticipated. The blind leaders of the blind walk in a circle destroying one tyranny in order to impose another, marching in the name of liberty towards a new variety of servitude. This must inevitably be the result when any attempt is made to reconstruct society by means of violence and without any reference to spiritual values.

This digression on the subject of government is not a preliminary to any suggestion that the system which worked so successfully during a period of ancient Indian history can be applied to modern Europe or America. No form of government can produce a required form of culture, but a culture inevitably produces the form of government that is appropriate to it. We live in a commercial age and we have evolved the form of government that is suited to it. The saying that a

## DIAGNOSIS OF MAN

nation has the rulers that it deserves is a true one, for the nation produces the rulers, not the rulers the nation. If, therefore, we are to have rulers who, like those of ancient India, care more for truth than for good business, we must be a nation to whom spiritual values are of more importance than worldly success. This in turn implies that each of us as individuals puts development, in the true sense of the word, before all other considerations

The troubles from which we are now suffering are but the symptoms of a chronic disease that has suddenly become acute. For years there have been premonitory warnings, and now, with the outbreak of war the underlying illness is becoming apparent to everybody. It would be as absurd to regard our troubles as being due to the activities of a few iniquitous and unbalanced individuals as it would be absurd for a small-pox patient to believe that his fever was due to the presence of one or two particularly obnoxious pustules that had appeared on his skin. The world has not suddenly changed in the last few years, and the men we blame are not the cause but the symptoms of the disease.

If there has been any progress – and after looking back at the golden age of history, the century in which Buddha, Zoroaster and Lao Tze lived, and which was followed by the Greek Golden Age, it is difficult to believe that humanity has progressed – we owe it to a few outstanding men whose words and whose lives still exert upon us their influence, to the great religious leaders, and to the gifted artists, poets and philosophers, the majority of whom are nameless, whose works are the priceless possession not of one nation, but of the whole of mankind. Such men have appeared in all nations and in all centuries, but because Western man has been so preoccupied with the outside world, it is to the East that we must turn to find the highest level that human thought has reached. And let us remember that Dr Bucke, the author of *Cosmic Consciousness*, made a stupendous error when he suggested that those who have reached a higher level of consciousness are, as it were, biological sports, that becoming more and more common will in time represent the normal state of mankind. The idea, begotten by Charles Darwin, of a progress ensured by Nature, an idea that owing to our victories over the external world has become an article of faith, must be abandoned. Development in the sense in which the word has

‘IF THERE HAD BEEN A CANDLE . . .’

been used in this book can never be, as Bucke suggests, automatic. It can only result from ceaseless effort, and from effort of a special nature, such as that taught by the yogis and by certain religious sects.

We live in a dark house, fumbling with our hands and knowing only that which is within their reach. If we understand Jalalu'ddin Rumi aright, it is a house in which there might be light, the light of higher levels of consciousness. Illuminated by this, contradictions would disappear and the many become One. For the Vedântist the One is the Brahman; for the religious man it is God. What for us is in many pieces, each with a form and a name, is to the seer but the different expressions of the One cosmic intelligence, the One Supreme Being.

To all it is not given to see, yet there are signs that he who knows can read. Science is beginning to change direction. Having completed the circle it now travels with idealist philosophy and religion.

When Western science [writes Sir John Woodroffe] attributes unity, conservation and continuity to matter, energy, and motion in a universe of obvious plurality and discontinuity, what it is in fact doing is to show that none of its conceptions have any meaning except in the assumption of unity and unmoving continuity of consciousness in the sense of the Vedântic *chit* (consciousness).

All matter, declares modern science, is built up from the same elements, all energy is evolved from one energy; energy passes into matter, and matter into energy. To attain unity amid apparent multiplicity is the goal towards which modern science is surely travelling. It is science that now comes into line with the Vedânta and religious teaching, not they that are forced to find reconciliation with science. It may be that what the enlightened Hindu has known in his heart for thousands of years will some day be taught in the lecture halls of science. However much the functions of science, philosophy and religion may differ, however distant the points from which they start may be, eventually they will arrive at the same conclusion. For ‘Truth is One; the sages only call It by different names’. (*Rig Veda*)

Yet whilst the true leaders of mankind — the great philosophers, religious geniuses and scientists — point in one direction, we who constitute the vast bulk of humanity continue to turn our eyes in another. Moved by the mechanism of the body and under the lure of our so-

## DIAGNOSIS OF 'MAN

called individuality we live out the tiny span of our lives amid a turmoil of multiplicity and contradiction. Jalalu'ddin Rumi would seem to suggest that this is a fate that can be changed. Beginning with his words, we end with his words:

If there had been a candle in each one's hand, the difference would have gone out of their words.

The eye of sense-perception is only like the palm of the hand, the palm hath not the power to reach the whole of the elephant.

The eye of the Sea is one thing, and the foam another; leave the foam and look with the eye of the Sea

Day and night there is the movement of foam-flecks from the Sea: thou beholdest the foam, but not the Sea. Marvellous!

## BIBLIOGRAPHY



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### ALCHEMY

- |                     |                                            |
|---------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| Campbell, Donald    | <i>Arabian Medicine.</i>                   |
| Jung, Carl          | <i>The Integration of the Personality.</i> |
| Reid, John          | <i>Prelude to Chemistry.</i>               |
| Sherwood Taylor, F. | <i>A Survey of Greek Alchemy.</i>          |

### CHRISTIANITY

- |                           |                                      |
|---------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Jastide, Roger            | <i>The Mystical Life.</i>            |
| Boehme, Jacob             | <i>The Signature of All Things.</i>  |
| Chichester, The Bishop of | <i>Christianity and World Order.</i> |
| Herschell, W.             | <i>The Gospels in Parallel.</i>      |
| Inge, W R.                | <i>The Fall of the Idols.</i>        |
|                           | <i>Studies of English Mystics</i>    |
| Lillie, A.                | <i>Buddhism in Christendom</i>       |

### EASTERN RELIGIONS

- |                            |                                                                              |
|----------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Ballantync, J. R.          | <i>Translation of the Sankya Aphorisms of Kapila.</i>                        |
| David-Neel, A.             | <i>Buddhism.</i>                                                             |
| Evans-Wentz, W. Y.         | <i>Tibetan Yoga and Secret Doctrine</i>                                      |
| Ganganatha, J. H A         | <i>An English Translation, with the Sanscrit Text, of the Tattva Kaumudi</i> |
| Kirkitar, V J.             | <i>Studies in Vedānta</i>                                                    |
| Müller, Max                | <i>Sacred Books of the East Vols 19, 20, 39 and 40</i>                       |
| Pallis, Marco              | <i>Peaks and Lamas.</i>                                                      |
| Radhakrishnan, S           | <i>Eastern Religions and Western Thought.</i>                                |
|                            | <i>The Vedānta, according to Sankara and Ramanuja.</i>                       |
| Ballou, Robert O. (Editor) | <i>The Bible of the World</i>                                                |
| Sri Ramakrishna Memorial   | <i>The Cultural Heritage of India 3 vols.</i>                                |

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- |                       |                                                                                                                         |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Waley, Arthur         | <i>The Way and Its Power.</i><br><i>Three Ways of Thought in Ancient China.</i>                                         |
| ENDOCRINOLOGY         |                                                                                                                         |
| Berman, Louis         | <i>The Glands regulating Personality.</i>                                                                               |
| Cannon, Walter B.     | <i>Bodily Changes in Pain, Hunger, Fear and Rage</i>                                                                    |
| Geikie Cobb, I.       | <i>The Glands of Destiny.</i>                                                                                           |
| GENERAL               |                                                                                                                         |
| Carrel, Alexis        | <i>Man the Unknown.</i>                                                                                                 |
| Heard, Gerald         | <i>The Sources of Civilisation</i>                                                                                      |
| Langdon Brown, Walter | <i>Thus We are Men</i>                                                                                                  |
| Macneile Dixon, W.    | <i>The Human Situation</i>                                                                                              |
| PHILOSOPHY            |                                                                                                                         |
| Bergson, Henri        | <i>Creative Evolution</i><br><i>An Outline of Modern Knowledge.</i>                                                     |
| Fechner               | <i>Zenda-vesta.</i>                                                                                                     |
| Joad, C. E. M         | <i>Guide to Philosophy.</i><br><i>Guide to the Philosophy of Morals and Politics</i><br><i>Philosophy for Our Times</i> |
| Nietzsche, F. W.      | <i>Thus Spake Zarathustra.</i>                                                                                          |
| Ouspensky, P. D.      | <i>A New Model of the Universe</i> 2nd Edition.<br><i>Tertium Organum</i>                                               |
| Rose, W. (Editor)     | <i>Outline of Knowledge</i>                                                                                             |
| Whitehead, A. N.      | <i>Science and the Modern World.</i>                                                                                    |
| PSYCHOLOGY            |                                                                                                                         |
| Brown, W.             | <i>Psychology and Psycho-Therapy</i>                                                                                    |
| Bucke, R. M.          | <i>Cosmic Consciousness</i>                                                                                             |
| Coster, G.            | <i>Yoga and Western Psychology</i>                                                                                      |
| James, William        | <i>The Varieties of Religious Experience.</i>                                                                           |
| Janet, Professor      | <i>Etats Mentales des Hystériques.</i>                                                                                  |
| McDougall, W.         | <i>The Energies of Man</i>                                                                                              |
| Stephen, Karin        | <i>Psycho-Analysis and Medicine.</i>                                                                                    |

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Thouless, R. H.                    *Psychology of Religion.*  
Von Hugel, Baron                *The Mystical Element in Religion.*  
Watson, J. B.                      *Psychology from the Standpoint of a  
                                         Behaviourist.*

## SCIENCE

- Planck, Max                        *Where is Science Going?*  
Sherrington, Sir Charles        *Man on His Nature.*  
Tilney, F., and Riley, H A      *The Form and Functions of the Central  
                                         Nervous System.*

